

GROW UP!

The Epistles

of Peter

1 Peter 2:1-2:

*" Therefore, rid yourselves of all malice and all deceit, hypocrisy, envy, and slander of every kind.
2 Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may **GROW UP** in your salvation."*



God recognizes that there are milestones in a person's life as a Christian. While many of us focus on the importance of salvation, salvation is really only the *beginning* of a Christian's life. Like a newborn baby, the new believer must grow beyond the stages of infancy into childhood, adolescence, young adulthood and finally into mature adulthood.

Salvation gives Christians life after death. The issue is not "life after death" so much as it is "life after birth." Since salvation is entirely and completely the work of God, what should we do with the new life that God has given us? This study will explore this question as we learn what God's Word says about how we should GROW UP in our faith.

Table of Contents

PAGE

1.	"Grow Up!" The Life of Peter.....	1
	§ Milestone: A name to Live Up To.....	3
	§ Milestone: Are You REALLY a Disciple Yet?.....	5
	§ Milestone: Learning to Trust God in the School of Deep Water.....	7
	§ Milestone: Help Me! I've Fallen and I Can't Get Up!.....	8
	§ Milestone: Lessons Learned and Lived Out.....	10
	§ Milestone: Marking the Stages of Growth.....	11
	§ Milestone: From Disciple to Leader, Spokesman and Teacher.....	12
	§ A Reflection of Peter's Growth Stages as a Maturing Believer.....	13
2.	An Awesome Inheritance.....	14
	§ <i>Mini Study 1: The Sovereignty of God Versus the Sovereignty of Man</i>	16
	Peter's Program for Growing Up and Becoming a Mature Christian.....	23
3.	Through Your Trials.....	24
	§ 'Salvation Rocks' in the Heavens.....	25
	§ Your First Five Do's: Gird Up the Loins of Your Mind.....	26
	§ This World is Not My Home, I'm Just a-Passin' Through.....	28
4.	A Purchase in Blood (and What it Bought).....	29
5.	Growing Up in Our Attitudes and Speech.....	32
	§ <i>Mini Study 2: The Most Hurtful of Sins?</i>	33
6.	Growing Up as A Living Stone.....	35
7.	Of Kings and Priests, Sojourners and Pilgrims.....	38
	§ <i>Mini Study 3: Meet King Melchizedek and the Cities of Refuge</i>	39
8.	Of Citizens and Servants: Submitting to Authority.....	45
9.	Marriage Vows.....	49
10.	How to Live in a Pagan Culture.....	51
	§ <i>Mini Study 4: Dispensational Gaps in Scripture</i>	52
11.	Preaching to the Spirits.....	56
	§ <i>Mini Study 5: The Nephillim Conspiracy (The Truth Behind the Flood of Noah)</i>	58
12.	A New Life in Christ.....	68
13.	Does the END Justify the MEANS?.....	66
	§ <i>Mini Study 6: The Grumbling Effect</i>	67
14.	On Trial for the Name of Christ.....	70
15.	Responsibilities of the Church in Troubled Times.....	72
16.	Knowing Your Enemy.....	75
	§ <i>Mini Study 7: Your Enemy Unmasked – the Life and Times of Satan</i>	76
17.	Applying the Powerful Truths of 1 Peter 5.....	81
	§ How to Properly Deal With Sins Resulting From Our Taking Control.....	86
18.	Keeping Good Company.....	91
19.	A Symphony of Grace.....	93
20.	Finishing Well.....	97
21.	I Remember Like it Was Yesterday.....	99
	§ <i>Mini Study 8: Sukkot, Anyone? The Feast of Tabernacles</i>	101
22.	An Even More Overwhelming Argument.....	103
	§ <i>Mini Study 9: The Science of Probability and Prophecy</i>	105

Table of Contents – Page 2

	<u>PAGE</u>
23. False Teachers, Part 1.....	107
24. False Teachers, Part 2.....	110
§ Mini Study 10: Angels Who Don't Accuse Dignitaries.....	113
25. False Teachers Unmasked.....	115
26. Remembrance, Skepticism and Willful Ignorance.....	118
27. Looking Back and Looking Ahead.....	121
28. Writing the Final Chapters of Your Life.....	125
<i>Appendix</i>	
1. Peter in the Apostolic Church.....	128
2. Stone and Rock in Scripture.....	130
3. Timeline for "The Days of Noah".....	134
4. Sukkot: The Feast of Tabernacles.....	136
My Doer's Journal.....	141

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

1. "Grow Up!" The Life of Peter

- *if you meet the writer, you want to say that you read his book! We will meet Peter soon!*
- *most major Christian doctrines have Peter at their center*

Peter's Origins:

- § Original name in Greek was *Sim* Simon (John 1:42) Hebrew = Simeon; heard, to be heard
- § His father's name was Jo John and like his father, he was a fisherman (Matthew 16:7)
- § Peter ~~£~~ was ~~£~~ was not married (Mark 1:30) *Interesting that John named his kids with Greek names (Andrew and Simon)*
- § Came from Be Bethsaida, a town in the Greek area of Galilee Ū
- § First command from Jesus (Mark 1:17) Follow Me
- § Last command from Jesus (John 21:22) You follow Me

John 1:35-45 (NIV)

The next day John [the Baptist] was there [baptizing at Bethany] again with two of his disciples. 36 When he saw Jesus passing by, he said, "Look, the Lamb of God!" 37 When the two disciples heard him say this, they followed Jesus. 38 Turning around, Jesus saw them following and asked, "What do you want?" They said, "Rabbi" (which means Teacher), "where are you staying?" 39 "Come," he replied, "and you will see." So they went and saw where he was staying, and spent that day with him. It was about the tenth hour. 40 Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, was one of the two who heard what John had said and who had followed Jesus. 41 The first thing Andrew did was to find his brother Simon and tell him, "We have found the Messiah" (that is, the Christ). 42 And he brought him to Jesus. Jesus looked at him and said, "You are Simon son of John. You will be called Cephass" (which, when translated, is Peter). 43 The next day Jesus decided to leave for Galilee. Finding Philip, he said to him, "Follow me." 44 Philip, like Andrew and Peter, was from the town of Bethsaida.

Y will be called – Jesus did not call him Peter then - prophetic

Mark 1:9-20 (NIV)

At that time Jesus came from Nazareth in Galilee and was baptized by John in the Jordan. 10 As Jesus was coming up out of the water, he saw heaven being torn open and the Spirit descending on him like a dove. 11 And a voice came from heaven: "You are my Son, whom I love; with you I am well pleased." 12 At once the Spirit sent him out into the desert, 13 and he was in the desert forty days, being tempted by Satan. He was with the wild animals, and angels attended him. 14 After John was put in prison, Jesus went into Galilee, proclaiming the good news of God. 15 "The time has come," he said. "The kingdom of God is near. Repent and believe the good news!" 16 As Jesus walked beside the Sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and his brother Andrew casting a net into the lake, for they were fishermen. 17 "Come, follow me," Jesus said, "and I will make you fishers of men." 18 At once they left their nets and followed him. 19 When he had gone a little farther, he saw James son of Zebedee and his brother John in a boat, preparing their nets. 20 Without delay he called them, and they left their father Zebedee in the boat with the hired men and followed him.

Ū Q: is the Mark incident the same incident as we read in the John 1 passage above? A: NO (similar ≠ same)

Q1: Using the facts presented in the two passages above, describe how Peter became a disciple of Jesus.

Jesus had been baptized by John and then had endured His 40 days of temptation. Following His temptation, Jesus passed by Bethany (or Bethbara, and this was one of 2 towns called Bethany, the other being south of Jerusalem), the area where John was baptizing and John noted Jesus as the Son of God. Two disciples of John were there with John, Andrew and an unnamed disciple. Andrew and the other disciple of John spent the day with Jesus. Andrew left Jesus and immediately told his brother Simon that Jesus was the Messiah, brought him to Jesus, who declared that at some point in the future Simon would be called "Cephas" or Peter.

At some point John the Baptist was arrested. Jesus came to the region of Galilee and found Peter and Andrew working their fishing boat, and called them to be His disciples.

Being a fisherman requires: strength, endurance, hard work, patience, and faith



1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Of the four disciples called by Jesus that day, all have prominent roles as part of Jesus "inner circle:"

	Andrew	Peter	James	John	Others
1. Witnessed Jesus' first exorcism (Mark 1:21-30)	x	x	x	x	
2. Appointed as an apostle (Mark 3:13-18)	x	x	x	x	
3. The raising of Jairus' daughter (Mark 5:35-43)		x	x	x	
3. Witnessed the Transfiguration of Jesus (Matthew 17:1-2)		x	x	x	
4. Received a confidential briefing from Jesus about the end-times (Mark 13:1-5)	x	x	x	x	
5. Was with Jesus at the Garden of Gethsemane (Matthew 26:36-38)		x	x	x	
6. Personally witnessed Jesus' ascension into heaven (Acts 1:6-13)	x	x	x	x	

Q2: What specific qualities would characterize Peter during his discipleship years (as illustrated in the Scriptures below – confine your answers to just these verses)?

Scripture	What Happened	Character Qualities
Matthew 14:25-41	<i>Peter sees Jesus walking on the water to the disciples in the boat, and gets out and starts walking towards Him</i>	<i>Bold, impulsive, acts before he thinks, finds himself in 'oops moment' because he does not think first</i>
John 6:60-69	<i>Jesus culls out His followers to only the 12 most devoted, Peter among them, and Peter confesses that Jesus has the words of life</i>	<i>Speaks first out of the group, truth seeker, self-sacrifice, insightful</i>
Matthew 16:21-23	<i>Peter rebukes Jesus and tells Him "Never, Lord" – an oxymoron – when Jesus predicts His upcoming death</i>	<i>Speaks without thinking and having only part of the facts; impulsive; dubious judgment</i>
John 13:1-10	<i>When Jesus washes His disciples' feet, Peter protests at first, Jesus corrects him, then he wants his hands and head washed as well</i>	<i>Simple-minded – takes the first answer without thinking it through; impulsive</i>
Matthew 26:31-35	<i>Peter boldly states that regardless of what others do, he will stand regardless</i>	<i>Bold, boastful, impulsive, doesn't think things through, makes promises he cannot keep</i>
John 18:8-11	<i>At Jesus' arrest in the garden, Peter pulls out his sword and cuts off the ear of the high priest's servant</i>	<i>Impulsive, bold, acts before he thinks, dubious judgment, devoted to Jesus</i>

Q3: Which of the character qualities of the ones listed are the marks of spiritual maturity and which are the marks of immaturity?

About the only mark of spiritual maturity in Peter's life prior to Jesus' resurrection is Peter's recognition that Jesus has the words of truth, and that he craves to be around Jesus because of this.

Most of the qualities illustrated in these Scriptures are marks of immaturity, making bold professions that border on boasting, only to fail because he is not wise in his actions. In many cases he acts like the simple-minded fisherman that he was, relying on his ability to take quick action.

Truly, Peter's life prior to his receiving of the Holy Spirit was typical of most immature believers...

The life of Peter is like looking into a mirror at how we 'grow up' as a Christian...

U we need to examine the path of his life via the gospels and Acts to see the milestones of GROWING UP!

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Milestone: A Name to Live Up To



"But who do you say that I am?"

Matthew 16:13-18 NKJV

When Jesus came into the region of Caesarea Philippi, He asked His disciples, saying, "Who do men say that I, the Son of Man, am?" 14 So they said, "Some say John the Baptist, some Elijah, and others Jeremiah or one of the prophets." 15 He said to them, "But who do you say that I am?" 16 Simon Peter answered and said, "You are the Christ, the Son of the living God." 17 Jesus answered and said to him, "Blessed are you, Simon Bar-Jonah, for flesh and blood has not revealed this to you, but My Father who is in heaven. 18 And I also say to you that you are **Peter**, and on this **rock** I will build My church, and the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it.

U we are to be on the offensive, not wait to be attacked

Q6: When Jesus said this, to what or to whom was He pointing? Why?

I believe that when Jesus said this he pointed either to Himself (most likely explanation) or to some other large mountain-sized rock, to make the point that Peter was just a man, who would live, stumble like all men, and die, but the he (Christ) would be eternal, and would be the church's foundation, a bedrock.

Q4: Why did they answer John the Baptist, Elijah, Jeremiah or a prophet?

This is what the people thought, as they tried to make sense about who Jesus was. Many theories, but the religious leadership was unwilling to admit corporately that He was Messiah, even though all the signs were there...

Q5: What was remarkable about Peter's answer?

Peter's answer was precisely true, and it was given to him by revelation from God. It was given in Peter-like fashion, him speaking up first when a question was posed to the group.

U Cephas – Aramaic term, Greek is petros

Peter – petros: A small rock or stone

Rock – petra: A large rock

Church – ekklesia – a calling out; assembly

U first use by Christ of church; first mention in NT

Got a Piece of the Rock?



The *Law of Expository Constancy* states that phrases and idioms are used consistently throughout Scripture:

Deuteronomy 32:15 NKJV Then he forsook God who made him, and scornfully esteemed the Rock of his salvation.

2 Samuel 22:2-3 NIV "The LORD is my rock, my fortress and my deliverer; 3 my God is my rock, in whom I take refuge, my shield and the horn of my salvation. He is my stronghold, my refuge and my savior —

Psalms 61:2 NIV From the ends of the earth I call to you, I call as my heart grows faint; lead me to the rock that is higher than I.

Psalms 78:35 NIV They remembered that God was their Rock, that God Most High was their Redeemer.

Psalms 118:22 NKJV The stone which the builders rejected Has become the chief cornerstone.

Daniel 2:34-35 NIV While you were watching, a rock was cut out, but not by human hands. It struck the statue on its feet of iron and clay and smashed them. 35 Then the iron, the clay, the bronze, the silver and the gold were broken to pieces at the same time and became like chaff on a threshing floor in the summer. The wind swept them away without leaving a trace. But the rock that struck the statue became a huge mountain and filled the whole earth.

Matthew 7:24-25 NKJV "Therefore whoever hears these sayings of Mine, and does them, I will liken him to a wise man who built his house on the rock: 25 and the rain descended, the floods came, and the winds blew and beat on that house; and it did not fall, for it was founded on the rock.

Romans 9:33 NKJV As it is written: "Behold, I lay in Zion a stumbling stone and rock of offense, And whoever believes on Him will not be put to shame."

1 Corinthians 10:1-4 NKJV Moreover, brethren, I do not want you to be unaware that all our fathers were under the cloud, all passed through the sea, 2 all were baptized into Moses in the cloud and in the sea, 3 all ate the same spiritual food, 4 and all drank the same spiritual drink. For they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them, and that Rock was Christ.

1 Peter 2:7-8 NIV Now to you who believe, this stone is precious. But to those who do not believe, "The stone the builders rejected has become the capstone," 8 and, "A stone that causes men to stumble and a rock that makes them fall."

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Peter's **new name** is emblematic of his new life as a disdisciple of Jesus. In a sense, his old name - Simon - speaks to his life while walking in the strength of his own flflesh, while his new name - Peter - speaks to what he can be become as a new creation in Christ. *Note wherever JESUS speaks his name as to what he is called: Simon, Simon Peter, or Peter*

2 Corinthians 5:17 NKJV

Therefore, if anyone is in Christ, he is a new creation; old things have passed away; behold, all things have become new.

Application of this point for us today:

Just because we have a "new name" it doesn't mean that we won't struggle with the old nature. In fact, we are engaged in a full time war:

Romans 7:15-25 NIV

I do not understand what I do. For what I want to do I do not do, but what I hate I do. 16 And if I do what I do not want to do, I agree that the law is good. 17 As it is, it is no longer I myself who do it, but it is sin living in me. 18 I know that nothing good lives in me, that is, in my sinful nature. For I have the desire to do what is good, but I cannot carry it out. 19 For what I do is not the good I want to do; no, the evil I do not want to do — this I keep on doing. 20 Now if I do what I do not want to do, it is no longer I who do it, but it is sin living in me that does it.

21 So I find this law at work: When I want to do good, evil is right there with me. 22 For in my inner being I delight in God's law; 23 but I see another law at work in the members of my body, waging war against the law of my mind and making me a prisoner of the law of sin at work within my members. 24 What a wretched man I am! Who will rescue me from this body of death? 25 Thanks be to God — through Jesus Christ our Lord!

So then, I myself in my mind am a slave to God's law, but in the sinful nature a slave to the law of sin.

Ü written by Paul, someone we do not associate with having difficulty in living a holy and set apart life...



There is a continuous battle going on inside every Christian between their new nature and their old flesh nature...

ASSIGN THE VERSES FOR FOLKS TO LOOK UP AND READ Ü



Key points

- § Never forget that you are in a full-time battle (Ephesians 6:12).
- § Recognize your own sin sinfulness (1 John 1:8).
- § Never assume that the enemy has forsaforsaken you (1 Peter 5:8).
- § Promptly seek His forgiveness and forg_____ when you err (1 John 1:9).
- § Appropriate the power of God for the battle by prprayer and His full arm armor (Ephesians 6:10-20).
- § Saturate yourself with the Word of God daidaily (2 Timothy 2:15).
- § Recognize that religion is empty and an attempt to fix up the flflesh (Colossians 2:8).
- § Humanism - the official state religion of America - is a denial of these truths (2 Timothy 3:1-7)
- § Salvation is frfree to all who ask, while discipleship costs eveeverything (Mark 10:17-22).

God does not desire converts, He desires DISCIPLES!

Like the story of Israel's struggles presented in the Book of Exodus, the life of Peter illustrates that the Christian life can be lived on two different planes:

- § the wilderness wanderings (living in our own flflesh),
- § or the rest in Canaan (living in GGod's strength)



A carnal Christian escapes the flames of Gehenna – BARELY – 1 Corinthians 3:9-15

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Milestone: Are You REALLY a Disciple Yet?

Luke 5:1-11 NKJV

Û Jesus

So it was, as the multitude pressed about Him to hear the word of God, that He stood by the Lake of Gennesaret, 2 and saw two boats standing by the lake; but the fishermen had gone from them and were washing their nets. 3 Then He got into one of the boats, which was Simon's, and asked him to put out a little from the land. And He sat down and taught the multitudes from the boat. 4 When He had stopped speaking, He said to Simon, "Launch out into the deep and let down your nets for a catch." 5 But Simon answered and said to Him, "Master, we have toiled all night and caught nothing; nevertheless at Your word I will let down the net." 6 And when they had done this, they caught a great number of fish, and their net was breaking. 7 So they signaled to their partners in the other boat to come and help them. And they came and filled both the boats, so that they began to sink. 8 When Simon Peter saw it, he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, "Depart from me, for I am a sinful man, O Lord!" 9 For he and all who were with him were astonished at the catch of fish which they had taken; 10 and so also were James and John, the sons of Zebedee, who were partners with Simon. And Jesus said to Simon, "Do not be afraid. From now on you will catch men." 11 So when they had brought their boats to land, they forsook all and followed Him.

Q10: Why should this passage really disturb us?

We should see our own condition as Simons and not Peters. We really do not forsake all to follow Him. Instead, we profess with non-full (empty) words (easy believerism) that cost us little...a little time, a little money, and then choose to live two different lives: our "Sunday church life" and the rest of the week.

I believe that this is a clarion call to discipleship in our lives as we see and understand our own "empty profession" to be the sin that it really is. If this passage has spoken to your heart, then you must make decisions about your life and what it needs to look like.

Û we need to imitate Christ on a full-time basis note that the issue Û is not salvation, but inheritance (verse 5b)
v6 – we are masters of self-deception along with our self-righteousness

Ephesians 5:1-8 NKJV

Therefore be imitators of God as dear children. 2 And walk in love, as Christ also has loved us and given Himself for us, an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet-smelling aroma. 3 But fornication and all uncleanness or covetousness, let it not even be named among you, as is fitting for saints; 4 neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor coarse jesting, which are not fitting, but rather giving of thanks. 5 For this you know, that no fornicator, unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, has any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and God. 6 Let no one deceive you with empty words, for because of these things the wrath of God comes upon the sons of disobedience. 7 Therefore do not be partakers with them. 8 For you were once darkness, but now you are light in the Lord. Walk as children of light.

Just because you were moved to confession of Christ does not mean not mean that you are His disciple. Discipleship involves much more...

Q7: Is this incident the same one as recorded by Mark or John (page 2)? What does this tell you?

No, it follows the other two incidents. Conclusions:

- 1) *Simon, James and John were not yet really disciples*
- 2) *Similar is not SAME, and we are to rightly divide the word of truth – not be sloppy – 2 Timothy 2:15*

Û washing nets – cleaning up & putting them away

Û not an accident – coincidence is not a kosher word

v5="Lord, you don't understand...listen while I explain..."

Q8: Examine Peter's response to Jesus' request? What does this tell you?

- 1) *Jesus asks this of Simon only, not the others (v2 = 2 boats)*
- 2) *Peter tells Jesus the condition of his discipleship by explaining his own reasoning as to why Jesus' request was a bad one Û oxymoron: "No, Lord" Û suggests he did not yet grasp that Jesus is God and the Messiah*
- 3) *J: 'let down your nets' vs. S: 'I will let down the net' seems like an attempt to humor Jesus*

Û partners in other boat – James & John were Peter & Andrew's partners in their fishing business; 1st 'they' = Peter & Jesus or possible Peter & Andrew

Q9: Explain what really happened in verses 8-11.

Simon saw his true condition as a just a "professor of faith" and not a real disciple, and that by not being a disciple, he had allowed sin to have a stronghold in his life. He needed to forsake more than being a fisherman...he needed to forsake being a carnal Christian. This is a milestone event in his life. He would never be the same again, as he would from this point forward begin growing up...

Q9: Note the use of Peter's name in this passage. What conclusions can you draw?

Simon = the carnal but saved believer

Peter = the saved disciple

Simon Peter = living in both worlds

- he has grown up a little through this episode

- this event required him to forsake all

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Matthew 16:13-17:8 NKJV

When Jesus came into the region of Caesarea Philippi, He asked His disciples, saying, "Who do men say that I, the Son of Man, am?" 14 So they said, "Some say John the Baptist, some Elijah, and others Jeremiah or one of the prophets." 15 He said to them, "But who do you say that I am?" 16 Simon Peter answered and said, "You are the Christ, the Son of the living God." 17 Jesus answered and said to him, "Blessed are you, Simon Bar-Jonah, for flesh and blood has not revealed this to you, but My Father who is in heaven. 18 And I also say to you that you are Peter, and on this rock I will build My church, and the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it. 19 And I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven, and whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven." 20 Then He commanded His disciples that they should tell no one that He was Jesus the Christ.

21 From that time Jesus began to show to His disciples that He must go to Jerusalem, and suffer many things from the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised the third day. 22 Then Peter took Him aside and began to rebuke Him, saying, "Far be it from You, Lord; this shall not happen to You!" 23 But He turned and said to Peter, "Get behind Me, Satan! You are an offense to Me, for you are not mindful of the things of God, but the things of men."

24 Then Jesus said to His disciples, "If anyone desires to come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow Me. 25 For whoever desires to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for My sake will find it. 26 For what profit is it to a man if he gains the whole world, and loses his own soul? Or what will a man give in exchange for his soul? 27 For the Son of Man will come in the glory of His Father with His angels, and then He will reward each according to his works. 28 Assuredly, I say to you, there are some standing here who shall not taste death till they see the Son of Man coming in His kingdom."

17:1 Now after six days Jesus took Peter, James, and John his brother, led them up on a high mountain by themselves; 2 and He was transfigured before them. His face shone like the sun, and His clothes became as white as the light. 3 And behold, Moses and Elijah appeared to them, talking with Him. 4 Then Peter answered and said to Jesus, "Lord, it is good for us to be here; if You wish, let us make here three tabernacles: one for You, one for Moses, and one for Elijah."

5 While he was still speaking, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them; and suddenly a voice came out of the cloud, saying, "This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. Hear Him!" 6 And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their faces and were greatly afraid. 7 But Jesus came and touched them and said, "Arise, and do not be afraid." 8 When they had lifted up their eyes, they saw no one but Jesus only.



Q11: How does the succession of events in Peter’s life from the passage above seem similar to what a relatively new Christian goes through?

Good discussion question!

<i>The High Points</i>	<i>The Low Points</i>
<i>1) Peter receives revelation as to Who Jesus is (16:13-20)</i>	<i>1) Peter tells Jesus what He should and should not do, not logically thinking that as Messiah, He is God and knows what He is doing is according to His plan (16:21-23)</i>
<i>2) Jesus provides additional insight into discipleship (16:24-28) and promises that some who have heard Him will see what His coming looks like (Peter was in this group)</i>	<i>2)</i>
<i>3) Peter is invited to a special preview of a pre-Trib strategy meeting.</i>	<i>3) He opens his mouth as usual, not comprehending what he is really seeing (booth would have been indicative of one of the feasts of the Jewish year)</i>
<i>4) Peter, John and James hear the voice of God</i>	<i>4) They fall terrified onto their faces and are afraid</i>
<i>5) Jesus says, “Arise and do not be afraid”</i>	

There appears to be an up and down pattern similar to a baby’s early days of walking or a child’s early days of math – lots of mistakes but keep plugging away at it. Despite having Jesus there bodily 24 X 7 to teach him, Peter experienced all of the symptoms of “early stage learning.”

Despite having Jesus there bodily 24 X 7 to teach him, Peter experienced all of the symptoms of “early stage learning.”

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Milestone: Learning to Trust God in the School of Deep Water

Matthew 14:22-32 NKJV

Immediately Jesus made His disciples get into the boat and go before Him to the other side, while He sent the multitudes away. 23 And when He had sent the multitudes away, He went up on the mountain by Himself to pray. Now when evening came, He was alone there. 24 But the boat was now in the middle of the sea, tossed by the waves, for the wind was contrary.

25 Now in the fourth watch of the night Jesus went to them, walking on the sea. 26 And when the disciples saw Him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, "It is a ghost!" And they cried out for fear.

27 But immediately Jesus spoke to them, saying, "Be of good cheer! It is I; do not be afraid." 28 And Peter answered Him and said, "Lord, if it is You, command me to come to You on the water."

29 So He said, "Come." And when Peter had come down out of the boat, he walked on the water to go to Jesus. 30 But when he saw that the wind was boisterous, he was afraid; and beginning to sink he cried out, saying, "Lord, save me!"

31 And immediately Jesus stretched out His hand and caught him, and said to him, "O you of little faith, why did you doubt?" 32 And when they got into the boat, the wind ceased.



Q12: Consider the passage above. What were Peter's "mistakes" that got him in trouble?

§ *Jumping to conclusions (it must be a ghost!)*

§ *Jumping in without thinking*

§ *Perhaps being a bit of a show-off*

§ *Once he was walking out on faith, taking his eyes off Jesus (he had to look elsewhere to see that he was sinking)*

§ *Trust*

> *the most honest thing he said was "Lord, save me!" similar to the story of the Pharisee & Tax collector Lk 18*

John 13:1-11 NKJV

Now before the Feast of the Passover, when Jesus knew that His hour had come that He should depart from this world to the Father, having loved His own who were in the world, He loved them to the end.

2 And supper being ended, the devil having already put it into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray Him, 3 Jesus, knowing that the Father had given all things into His hands, and that He had come from God and was going to God, 4 rose from supper and laid aside His garments, took a towel and girded Himself. 5 After that, He poured water into a basin and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel with which He was girded.



6 Then He came to Simon Peter. And Peter said to Him, "Lord, are You washing my feet?" 7 Jesus answered and said to him, "What I am doing you do not understand now, but you will know after this." (*"Lord, you don't understand!"*)

8 Peter said to Him, "You shall never wash my feet!" Jesus answered him, "If I do not wash you, you have no part with Me." 9 Simon Peter said to Him, "Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head!"

10 Jesus said to him, "He who is bathed needs only to wash his feet, but is completely clean; and you are clean, but not all of you." 11 For He knew who would betray Him; therefore He said, "You are not all clean."

U this water appears to be just as "deep" as the Sea of Galilee

Q13: Consider the passage above. This incident likely took place up to 18 months after the "water walking" incident. What specifics can you identify that show Peter's growth or lack of growth?

(-) *Still questioning the Lord's actions in a way that does not seem like he wants to learn, but is declaring things instead ("Lord, are You washing my feet?")*

(-) *Still boldly declaring the Jesus is wrong rather than coming to the realization that Jesus NEVER makes a mistake...what if he had said; "Lord, I do not understand what you are doing. Please help me understand...?"*

(+) *Accepting what Jesus says immediately (ex: verse 8)*

(-) *Still jumping to wrong conclusions – boldly – in verse 9 – wash ALL of me – and not taking time to think it through or to*

Q14: Agree or disagree, and why: *When it comes to areas where we are prone to fail, we will fail in the areas of our weakness and only stumble in the areas of our strength.*

While we stumble in our areas of weakness, we fail most decisively in our areas of strength

Peter's strength: bold action ready – fire - aim Peter

Peter failed by being too bold ...which led him to wrong conclusions, bold declarations & actions

R-F-A Peter! Ready – Fire – Aim Peter

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Ü this incident occurred immediately after the last Supper and feet washing...
Milestone: Help Me! I've Fallen and I Can't Get Up!



Mark 14:27-42 NKJV

Then Jesus said to them, "All of you will be made to stumble because of Me this night, for it is written: 'I will strike the Shepherd, and the sheep will be scattered.'

28 "But after I have been raised, I will go before you to Galilee."

29 Peter said to Him, "Even if all are made to stumble, yet I will not be." ***boldness***

30 Jesus said to him, "Assuredly, I say to you that today, even this night, before the rooster crows twice, you will deny Me three times."

31 ***But he spoke more vehemently, "If I have to die with You, I will not deny You!"***

And they all said likewise. ***again, a bold statement made without comprehension***

32 Then they came to a place which was named Gethsemane; and He said to His disciples, "Sit here while I pray." 33 And He took Peter, James, and John with Him, and He began to be troubled and deeply distressed. 34 Then He said to them, "My soul is exceedingly sorrowful, even to death. Stay here and watch."

35 He went a little farther, and fell on the ground, and prayed that if it were possible, the hour might pass from Him. 36 And He said, "Abba, Father, all things are possible for

You. Take this cup away from Me; nevertheless, not what I will, but what You will." ***Ü Note His comment to "Simon"***

37 Then He came and found them sleeping, and said to Peter, "Simon, are you sleeping? Could you not watch one hour? 38 Watch and pray, lest you enter into temptation. The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak."

39 Again He went away and prayed, and spoke the same words. 40 And when He returned, He found them asleep again, for their eyes were heavy; and they did not know what to answer Him. 41 Then He came the third time and said to them, "Are you still sleeping and resting? It is enough! The hour has come; behold, the Son of Man is being betrayed into the hands of sinners. 42 Rise, let us be going. See, My betrayer is at hand."

Q15: In the passage above, in what ways did Peter 'stumble and fall?'

Peter (Simon) continued to make bold statements that he did not back up. He stumbled in his boldness, and then fell asleep on the most critical night in history. Note Christ's statement: the spirit is willing – but limited by what the flesh will do. Peter continued to live in the flesh but declare boldly that he was living in the spirit!

EVERYTHING DONE IN THE FLESH WILL FAIL – why? See additional notes page

Everything done in the f_____ will fail

Mark 14:66-72 NKJV

Now as Peter was below in the courtyard, one of the servant girls of the high priest came. 67 And when she saw Peter warming himself, she looked at him and said, "You also were with Jesus of Nazareth."

68 But he denied it, saying, "I neither know nor understand what you are saying." And he went out on the porch, and a rooster crowed. 69 And the servant girl saw him again, and began to say to those who stood by, "This is one of them." 70 But he denied it again. And a little later those who stood by said to Peter again, "Surely you are one of them; for you are a Galilean, and your speech shows it."

71 Then he began to curse and swear, "I do not know this Man of whom you speak!" 72 A second time the rooster crowed. Then Peter called to mind the word that Jesus had said to him, "Before the rooster crows twice, you will deny Me three times." And when he thought about it, he wept.

Q16: What was Peter's dilemma? How did his decisions and actions affect his discipleship?

Do I tell the truth and risk all, or do I stay safe and deny the Truth? I believe that this episode truly exposed where his heart was in his walk. A crisis does not build character, it reveals it.

@ note that Peter once again fell in his strong suit – boldness, as it failed him.

Crisis does not bu BUILD character – it rev REVEALS it.

Mark 16:1-7 NKJV

Ü According to the passage in Mark 16:7, he must have lost his discipleship
 Now when the Sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, Mary the mother of James, and Salome bought spices, that they might come and anoint Him. 2 Very early in the morning, on the first day of the week, they came to the tomb when the sun had risen. 3 And they said among themselves, "Who will roll away the stone from the door of the tomb for us?" 4 But when they looked up, they saw that the stone had been rolled away — for it was very large. 5 And entering the tomb, they saw a young man clothed in a long white robe sitting on the right side; and they were alarmed. ***Ü clearly an angel***



6 But he said to them, "Do not be alarmed. You seek Jesus of Nazareth, who was crucified. He is risen! He is not here. See the place where they laid Him. 7 But go, tell His disciples — and Peter — that He is going before you into Galilee; there you will see Him, as He said to you."

Ü suggests that Peter was not a disciple at this time

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Salvation is free. Discipleship costs everything.

Q16: True or False and why:

T or F		Why:
<i>False</i>	Salvation can be lost	<i>its security depends on God and Christ (see John 17:6-26)</i>
<i>True</i>	Discipleship can be lost	<i>it depends on our faithfulness</i>

1 Corinthians 1:26-31 NKJV

For you see your calling, brethren, that not many wise according to the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called. 27 But God has chosen the foolish things of the world to put to shame the wise, and God has chosen the weak things of the world to put to shame the things which are mighty; 28 and the base things of the world and the things which are despised God has chosen, and the things which are not, to bring to nothing the things that are, 29 that no flesh should glory in His presence. 30 But of Him you are in Christ Jesus, who became for us wisdom from God — and righteousness and sanctification and redemption — 31 that, as it is written, "He who glories, let him glory in the LORD."

Q17: In what way(s) did Simon Peter allow his flesh to 'glory' during the early years of his discipleship?

- § *In his bold impulsive actions and declarations*
- § *In being the one to speak up first rather than to hold his thoughts until others had spoken or even remain silent (it is OK to remain silent sometimes)*
- §

Do we see a bit of Simon Peter in ourselves? Are we trying to make our flesh succeed? Remember that the message of Satan and the world is that the flesh can succeed...and that message is contradictory of the Word of God:

1 John 2:16-17 NKJV

16 For all that is in the world — the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life — is not of the Father but is of the world. 17 And the world is passing away, and the lust of it; but he who does the will of God abides forever.

Satan's number one stratagem is to distract you away from the truth and have you build on the untrue

2 Corinthians 10:3-6 NKJV	
For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war according to the flesh. 4 For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal but mighty in God for pulling down strongholds, 5 casting down arguments and every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, bringing every thought into captivity to the obedience of Christ, 6 and being ready to punish all disobedience when your obedience is fulfilled.	
Q17: Complete the discipleship principles in the passage above, and how can a disciple apply them?	
Key Principle	How it can be applied/live out in his/her life
Verse 3-4 the weapons of a disciples' wa_____ are not based on the flesh or its failings, but on God and thus they can pull down strongholds	<i>Recognize that you are in a war all of the time and be alert to the trickery of the flesh. They are prayer, being in fellowship and the Word, Ephesians 6, etc.</i>
Verse 5a things that run con_____ to God are never from God – Satan exalts himself against God	<i>Keep asking yourself this question: Is what I am doing bringing me closer to or farther away from God?</i>
Verse 5b bring every t _____ into captivity to the obedience of Christ <i>Û a believer's thought life is a crucial battleground</i>	<i>This is an area which must be monitored constantly – am I thinking thoughts that Christ would approve of, or Satan? It starts as a thought, roots to a desire, which finally births sin (James 1:12-15)</i>
Verse 6 Obedience punishes di_____ <i>our obedience to God punishes Satan's disobedience</i>	<i>Recognize that the best defense against disobedience is a strong offense of obedience. Keep measuring yourself in the area of obedience (examine yourself – I Cor 11)</i>

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Milestone: Lessons Learned and Lived Out

John 21:1-14 NKJV

After these things, Jesus showed Himself again to the disciples at the Sea of Tiberias, and in this way He showed Himself: 2 Simon Peter, Thomas called the Twin, Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, the sons of Zebedee, and two others of His disciples were together. 3 Simon Peter said to them, "I am going fishing." They said to him, "We are going with you also." They went out and immediately got into the boat, and that night they caught nothing. 4 But when the morning had now come, Jesus stood on the shore; yet the disciples did not know that it was Jesus.

5 Then Jesus said to them, "Children, have you any food?" They answered Him, "No." 6 And He said to them, "Cast the net on the right side of the boat, and you will find some." So they cast, and now they were not able to draw it in because of the multitude of fish.

7 Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved said to Peter, "It is the Lord!" Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he put on his outer garment (for he had removed it), and plunged into the sea. 8 But the other disciples came in the little boat (for they were not far from land, but about two hundred cubits), dragging the net with fish. 9 Then, as soon as they had come to land, they saw a fire of coals there, and fish laid on it, and bread.

10 Jesus said to them, "Bring some of the fish which you have just caught." 11 Simon Peter went up and dragged the net to land, full of large fish, one hundred and fifty-three; and although there were so many, the net was not broken. 12 Jesus said to them, "Come and eat breakfast." Yet none of the disciples dared ask Him, "Who are You?" — knowing that it was the Lord. 13 Jesus then came and took the bread and gave it to them, and likewise the fish. 14 This is now the third time Jesus showed Himself to His disciples after He was raised from the dead.



Q18: Explain "after these things" and what the mood among Jesus' disciples was.

After the crucifixion and events of Resurrection Sunday. The disciples were completely unsettled, not knowing what they should do. They were fearful that they might also be persecuted like Jesus, so they made themselves scarce. They seemed to have relocated back to their home area in Galilee.

When the going got tough, Simon went Fishing with all the stress he needed to return to something familiar

Q19: Compare John 21:5-6 with Luke 5:1-8 (pg 6). What changes do you note?

Not knowing that it was Jesus giving these experienced fishermen fishing advice, telling them to let down their net (singular). They followed it without question. Unlike in Luke 5, they did not try to humor Him. He told them to cast it on the RIGHT side (hand of blessing). They simply did as He suggested and found their net so full of fish that the group of them could not pull the net in.

Q20: Does verse 7 indicate that it is the same old Simon Peter?

It seems that Simon Peter is still ready-fire-aim Peter, just plunging into the water without question, completely impatient to wait for the boat to get to shore. However, he likely was overwhelmed that again Jesus would come and seek him out by the shores of Galilee

Q21: Carefully look at verses 6 to 11. What conclusions do you reach?

There were too many fish for the disciples to draw in themselves, but Peter seemed to have supernatural strength to draw it in himself. Either he was an unnaturally strong man, or he was empowered by the Holy Spirit through Jesus to perform this miracle. Even more so, the net should have broken and it did not.

Q22: Explain verse 12.

Clearly the disciples knew it was Jesus but they did not recognize His physical appearance (still bearing the signs of the beard-plucking from Isaiah 50:6?). They did not want to show their lack of faith by questioning who He was. It is odd that a stranger should give the disciples the bread and fish (verse 14), which is another way of stating that he is the provider of the bread and fish....

Q23: Place yourself in Peter's shoes. What might you be feeling right now?

He must have been somewhat fearful, not knowing how Jesus would treat him- given that he denied Jesus three times after His arrest, as foretold by Jesus. Were his own words "I do not know the man" still ringing in his ears?

As we've seen, it may be that Peter had lost his discipleship and was a bit broken by what had transpired. Perhaps Peter doubted himself, doubting his own standing with God and Jesus, and yet somehow drawn to Him.

Never one to lack for something to say, we have no record that he spoke up during the meal or even when Jesus told the disciples to bring some fish

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Milestone: Marking Stages of Growth

How do we know we have reached Christian maturity? If you think that you are, you are decidedly not! Known only by your ACTIONS

John 21:15-22 NKJV

So when they
had eaten breakfast,
Jesus said to Simon



Peter, "Simon, son of Jonah, do you love Me more than these?" He said to Him, "Yes, Lord; You know that I love You." He said to him, "Feed My lambs."

16 He said to him again a second time, "Simon, son of Jonah, do you love Me?" He said to Him, "Yes, Lord; You know that I love You." He said to him, "Tend My sheep."

17 He said to him the third time, "Simon, son of Jonah, do you love Me?" Peter was grieved because He said to him the third time, "Do you love Me?" And he said to Him, "Lord, You know all things; You know that I love You." Jesus said to him, "Feed My sheep.

What Jesus names him:

His original name, given before he began to follow Jesus (formal name, not indicative of a close personal relationship)

v15 – do you love Me agapeo- deep sacrificial love

You know (eidennai) I love (phileo) You *eidennai – possess innate knowledge about something phileo – liking, fondness resists the temptation to compare or brag honest response – shows he knows his heart*

Feed My lambs:

feed- boske – keep on feeding; an imperative responsibility of a herdsman lambs – arnia – small lambs (babes in the Word) indicative of his early growth (just saved)

v16 – do you love Me agapeo- deep sacrificial love

You know (eidennai) I love (phileo) You *eidennai – possess innate knowledge about something phileo – liking, fondness again an honest reflection of his heart*

Tend My sheep:

tend- poimaine – to shepherd (same root as pastor) - in the active imperative tense – continuously perform sheep – probatia – small sheep (adolescents in the Word) - indicative of his maturing (a young brash disciple)

v17 – do you love Me phileo- liking, fondness

You know (eidennai) all things
You know (ginosko) I love (phileo) You *ginosko – to know something by experience phileo – liking, fondness again an honest reflection of his heart*

Feed My sheep:

feed – boske - keep on feeding; an imperative responsibility of a herdsman sheep – probata – mature sheep (mature in the Word) - indicative of his maturing (a mature disciple)

Jesus asks Simon three questions in order to restore him from his three denials

Peter was grieved *elupethe* : *word means deep grief that takes you to a point of death indicative of Peter dying to self – we have little idea of what this means*

Three imperatives: Keep on feeding My little lambs

Keep on shepherding My little sheep *MY lambs, sheep > refutes the claim of the Pope and his "ownership of the flock" since it is Christ's*

Keep on feeding My sheep

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Milestone: From Disciple to Leader, Spokesman and Teacher

Acts 1:12-22 NKJV (immediately following Jesus' ascension into heaven from the Mount of Olives)

Then they returned to Jerusalem from the mount called Olivet, which is near Jerusalem, a Sabbath day's journey. 13 And when they had entered, they went up into the upper room where they were staying: Peter, James, John, and Andrew; Philip and Thomas; Bartholomew and Matthew; James the son of Alphaeus and Simon the Zealot; and Judas the son of James. 14 These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication, with the women and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with His brothers.



And in those days Peter stood up in the midst of the disciples (altogether the number of names was about a hundred and twenty), and said, 16 "Men and brethren, this Scripture had to be fulfilled, which the Holy Spirit spoke before by the mouth of David concerning Judas, who became a guide to those who arrested Jesus; 17 for he was numbered with us and obtained a part in this ministry."

18 (Now this man purchased a field with the wages of iniquity; and falling headlong, he burst open in the middle and all his entrails gushed out. 19 And it became known to all those dwelling in Jerusalem; so that field is called in their own language, Akel Dama, that is, Field of Blood.) 20 "For it is written in the Book of Psalms: 'Let his dwelling place be desolate, And let no one live in it'; and, 'Let another take his office.'

21 "Therefore, of these men who have accompanied us all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us, 22 beginning from the baptism of John to that day when He was taken up from us, one of these must become a witness with us of His resurrection."

- § Following Jesus' ascension, the disciples met to choose *a new apostle who would succeed Judas*
- § Peter assumes a leadership position within the group of *~120* disciples
- § Peter understood *Psalm 69:5* and *109:8* to be prophetic of *Judas*
- § Requirements for the one chosen: *They accompanied Jesus during His earthly ministry*
They were from within the 120 disciples
They had witnessed His resurrection

Q24: How did such a fisherman become knowledgeable of Scripture?

Clearly he had been listening and learning during the three years he had spent with Jesus. While yet a simple fisherman and business owner, he had a desire to know God's will and had studied God's Word. What is interesting is that he interpreted a somewhat obscure (to us) set of verses to apply to Judas, which must have been the prompting of the Holy Spirit...

Acts 2:7-16: 36-39 NKJV (following the outpouring of the Holy Spirit)

Then they were all amazed and marveled, saying to one another, "Look, are not all these who speak Galileans? 8 And how is it that we hear, each in our own language in which we were born? 9 Parthians and Medes and Elamites, those dwelling in Mesopotamia, Judea and Cappadocia, Pontus and Asia, 10 Phrygia and Pamphylia, Egypt and the parts of Libya adjoining Cyrene, visitors from Rome, both Jews and proselytes, 11 Cretans and Arabs — we hear them speaking in our own tongues the wonderful works of God." 12 So they were all amazed and perplexed, saying to one another, "Whatever could this mean?"

Others mocking said, "They are full of new wine."

But Peter, standing up with the eleven, raised his voice and said to them, "Men of Judea and all who dwell in Jerusalem, let this be known to you, and heed my words. 15 For these are not drunk, as you suppose, since it is only the third hour of the day. 16 But this is what was spoken by the prophet Joel...

...36 "Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly that God has made this Jesus, whom you crucified, both Lord and Christ." 37 Now when they heard this, they were cut to the heart, and said to Peter and the rest of the apostles, "Men and brethren, what shall we do?"

38 Then Peter said to them, "Repent, and let every one of you be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins; and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. 39 For the promise is to you and to your children, and to all who are afar off, as many as the Lord our God will call."

Q25: A few weeks earlier, Peter and the disciples were hiding out for fear of the Jews (John 20:19). Now Peter stands up and addresses them boldly. What happened?

He had received a full in-pouring of the Holy Spirit and was beginning to allow the Holy Spirit to use his natural boldness and leadership for God's purposes, and no longer to focus on self but on what God would have him do.

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*



Acts 4:5-13 NKJV (following Peter's arrest for healing the lame man in the temple area)

And it came to pass, on the next day, that their rulers, elders, and scribes, 6 as well as Annas the high priest, Caiaphas, John, and Alexander, and as many as were of the family of the high priest, were gathered together at Jerusalem. 7 And when they had set them in the midst, they asked, "By what power or by what name have you done this?"

8 Then Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit, said to them, "Rulers of the people and elders of Israel: 9 If we this day are judged for a good deed done to a helpless man, by what means he has been made well, 10 let it be known to you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom you crucified, whom God raised from the dead, by Him this man stands here before you whole. 11 This is the 'stone which was rejected by you builders, which has become the chief cornerstone.' 12 Nor is there salvation in any other, for there is no other name under heaven given among men by which we must be saved."

13 Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were uneducated and untrained men, they marveled.

Q26: How does the Holy Spirit use Peter's natural, God-given "talents?"

The Holy Spirit allowed Peter's natural, God-given talents to progress to the point where they were useful for the times and places that the Holy Spirit would lead Peter.

- § *Boldness without wisdom gave way to boldness WITH wisdom*
- § *Just speaking up gave way to speaking deep truths*
- § *Impulsive declarations gave way to speaking the truth in love*
- § *Fear at personal risk gave way to boldness in Christ*

Q27: How would you characterize Peter's response to those who had arrested him? How does this compare to the last "arrest" he had attended?

The same folks who tried Jesus and drove the Romans to crucify Him had arrested Peter just a month or two later. Peter fled that arrest, and later denied any knowledge of Christ. Now he stands up boldly and declares that they were the ones who crucified Christ and that they were (dead) wrong! Moreover Peter and John did not have the same level of Scriptural training that Annas, Caiaphas, John, Alexander and the other members of the high priesthood / Pharisees / Sadducees / Sanhedrin had...and were blown away by what they were seeing!

Peter had fully accepted the responsibilities of discipleship and had grown up into a more mature disciple.

From Acts 2 on, Peter had the fire of God in his heart and the flame of love in his eyes. Note the progression over the final 30+ years of his life, from student to teacher...

John 21:15-18 NKJV – written ~32 A.D.

So when they had eaten breakfast, Jesus said to Simon Peter, "Simon, son of Jonah, do you love Me more than these?" He said to Him, "Yes, Lord; You know that I love You." He said to him, "Feed My lambs." 16 He said to him again a second time, "Simon, son of Jonah, do you love Me?" He said to Him, "Yes, Lord; You know that I love You." He said to him, "Tend My sheep." 17 He said to him the third time, "Simon, son of Jonah, do you love Me?" Peter was grieved because He said to him the third time, "Do you love Me?" And he said to Him, "Lord, You know all things; You know that I love You." Jesus said to him, "Feed My sheep.

1 Peter 5:1-4 NKJV – written ~63 A.D.

The elders who are among you I exhort, I who am a fellow elder and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that will be revealed: 2 Shepherd the flock of God which is among you, serving as overseers, not by compulsion but willingly, not for dishonest gain but eagerly; 3 nor as being lords over those entrusted to you, but being examples to the flock 4 and when the Chief Shepherd appears, you will receive the crown of glory that does not fade away.

- § To be an effective teacher, you must first apprentice as a willing student
- § Wisdom, a key element of maturity, takes experience and time to obtain
- § Growth does not usually happen by leaps and bound, but by slow degrees
 - There are key milestones along the way that mark our progress
- § God does not want converts, he wants disciples who will grow into maturity
- § God wants and expects us to reproduce ourselves in the lives of others

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

[A Reflection of Peter's Growth Stages as a Believer](#)

We can trace the stages of growth as a Christian by the stages we see from Peter's life experience:

Life Stage	What We See Lived Out	Scripture References
1. Saved by Christ	An initial desire to hear the truth and then become convicted, and finally follow Him	John 1:35-45; Mark 1:9-20
2. New convert	Hunger for the Word; will jump in without thinking; make bold professions of faith; insightful; "Lord, you don't understand..."	Matthew 14:25-41; 16:13-23; John 13:1-10
3. Carnal / Fallen	Boastful; proud; prone to self-deception; seeks own comfort / safety first; learns lessons the hard way with much heartache	Matthew 26:31-35; Mark 14:66-72; 16:1-7
4. Restored	Realizes that <i>without Jesus I am nothing</i> ; focus on self is not the answer; loss of pride; becoming humble and teachable	John 21:1-25
5. Useful	Willing to serve without thinking of self or cost of service; aware of and willing to be led and used by the Holy Spirit	Acts 1
6. Mature	Spirit-filled; searches out the deep truths of Scripture; lives out the Christian life boldly, but not in own strength	Acts 2-12
7. Reproducer	Has lived out my faith over the years; has wise counsel; is not afraid of dying or a life sacrifice if need be	I & II Peter

Q28: True or False, and why:

1. It is possible to become stuck at any one of these stages and spend ones' life there.

True – many Christians live this way – they have a “comfortable” seat in the pew, go to church religiously, have a habit pattern established that has been the same for many, many years, and do not see the need to move on from there.

2. It is possible to grow all the way to maturity and beyond.

True- but very difficult and not without sacrifice! You must turn your back on the world and all of its pleasures and make God #1 on a list of 1...something that few are willing to do. Billy Graham: “The Christian life is not hard...it is impossible.” Even Paul, who had progressed far beyond most mortals as a Christian still saw sinful attitudes, desires, etc. reigning in him...

3. It is possible to repeat stages multiple times in ones life.

*True - This seems to be the pattern for most Christians...rising and falling...growing than getting comfortable...big crisis – deliverance – then coasting...
If our thought life were public, we'd all go to jail*

4. One never arrives at total maturity.

True in this life, I suspect that we will be perfect, just as He is perfect once we are in heaven and have been purged of our sin nature...but it will not be by our own efforts, but by His work in us to purify us

SOME OF THESE STAGES CAN EVEN OVERLAP – A STRUGLING 5 CAN DISCIPLE (7)

Personal Reflection: What life stage am I currently residing in? Why? Is this where God wants me?

Ask folks to work on this honestly...



[See Appendix Section for Peter in the Apostolic Church](#)

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

2. An Awesome Inheritance

*No doubt as to the writer or his apostleship
Written ~ 62-64 AD...*

1 Peter 1:1-5 NKJV

Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, To the pilgrims of the Dispersion in Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia, 2 elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, in sanctification of the Spirit, for obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace to you and peace be multiplied.

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to His abundant mercy has begotten us again to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, 4 to an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled and that does not fade away, reserved in heaven for you, 5 who are kept by the power of God through faith for salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.



Verse 1: Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the pilgrims of the Dispersion in Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia...

a pilgrim or stranger; resident alien; refugee

§ pilgrims – *parepidemos*

§ Dispersion – *diaspora* *ones scattered; separated from their homeland and now located in the 5 regions*

Q1: In what way(s) is Peter fulfilling the Lord's instructions to him in John 21:15-17 and Acts 15:7?

Peter was instructed to feed and tend the Lord's flock, who would be scattered as a result of the persecution of the Jews first, then the Roman emperors. His vision of the animals let down via a cloth from heaven as related in Acts 10 was God's instructions that the Jews were to be a light to the Gentile nations (Isaiah 49:6). Additionally, Peter is filling the Great Commission of Acts 1:8 – preaching to the ends of the earth.

Ü note the Trinity in this verse

Verse 2: ...elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, in sanctification of the Spirit, for obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace to you and peace be multiplied.

§ foreknowledge – *prognosis* *deliberate forethought; foreknowledge; to know completely ahead of time*

Q2: Define what "election" means and the implications of how the "pilgrims" are elected per verse 2.

the word "elect" is added because of the context; however, the term is applicable. Election in the context of verse 2 means that the individual pilgrims are chosen by God to be set aside to Him for service, first as saved sinners and then to mature into disciples. Before God laid the foundations of the plant Earth, He deliberately chose us to be His people, knowing that we would make a choice to be saved. More on sovereignty of God, sovereignty of man shortly...

§ sanctification – *hagiasmos*

to make holy, separated for God and from the world.

Q3: How does sanctification happen? What is its purpose according to verse 2?

In this case, the work of the Holy Spirit performs this action in the life of one who is first saved, as part of maturing them to discipleship; for obedience. The mark of a mature disciple is that he/she is obedient to the leading of the Holy Spirit, to God's Word, and to the authority that God has placed in his/her life.

§ obedience – *hupakoe* *Hu-pa-ko-ay; attentive hearkening, compliance and/or submission to*

§ Sprinkling of blood – refers to the OT priestly work done at the tabernacle (Lev. 7:14, 14:7,17,51; Heb 9:13, 12:24) *but on people only* at the inauguration of the Mosaic Covenant (Ex 24:8)

Ü grace is very dear to Peter; Jesus showed Him much grace. Do we do show


§ Pe Peace follows gr grace ("grace" mentioned 10 times in this epistle) *others the same grace we got?*

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

-----x x x x x x-----

Mini Study 1: The Sovereignty of God Versus The Sovereignty of Man

Today we want to talk about choices...free will...election...God's foreknowledge& what the Bible says about these things...

<p>THE ROAD LESS TRAVELED by Robert Frost</p> <p>Two roads diverged in a yellow wood, and sorry I could not travel both And be one traveler, long I stood, and looked down one as far as I could To where it bent in the undergrowth</p> <p>Then took the other as just as fair, and having perhaps the better claim Because it was grassy and wanted wear, though as for that, the passing there Had worn them really about the same</p>	
--	---

Û have someone read; then discuss the question below

MSQ1: What are the 'significant choices' that you had to make over the past year? On what did you base your choices (how did you figure out what to do)?

good general discussion to talk about difficult choices, weighing between options, maybe someone does the Ben Franklin list

MSQ2: What does the passage below say about a person's free will and decision-making?

Proverbs 16:1-3 NKJV

- 1 The preparations of the heart belong to man, but the answer of the tongue is from the LORD.
- 2 All the ways of a man are pure in his own eyes, but the LORD weighs the spirits.
- 3 Commit your works to the LORD, and your thoughts will be established.

- § *Man's MO is to make plans and preparations for most things, even when it seems like there is no plan*
- § *A man will reason out his thoughts in his head and say to himself that the plans seem good, correct and pure*
- § *The answer to questions is not coincidental, but from God, who delivers His answers through the hands of men (usually!)*
- § *God is the one Who weighs the heart, intents, etc.*
- § *By placing God FIRST on a list of ONE, your thoughts will have Him as their foundation, upon which good things can be built. ASK HIM before doing; do not presume!*

Proverbs 21:1-5 NKJV

- 1 The king's heart is in the hand of the LORD, like the rivers of water; He turns it wherever He wishes.
- 2 Every way of a man is right in his own eyes, but the LORD weighs the hearts.
- 3 To do righteousness and justice is more acceptable to the LORD than sacrifice.
- 4 A haughty look, a proud heart, and the plowing of the wicked are sin.
- 5 The plans of the diligent lead surely to plenty, but those of everyone who is hasty, surely to poverty.

Important Principles

- § God is in co_control of all aspects of this life (even kings and mighty rivers!) (v1)
- § Man is dec_deceived by his own "goodness" and cannot see even his own heart as God can (v2)
- § Even the wrong way may seem r_right before you get started (v2)
- § God desires in us right outcomes with right mot_motives and methods (v3)
- § Things done out of pr_pride and wickedness are SIN, regardless of good outcomes (v4)
Û examine your motives...why are you REALLY doing this?
- § God blesses dil_diligence and not haste (v5) *ex: grow a garden; investments*
Ûdefine what this is
- § God wants His people to cons_consider things first before jumping into action (v5)
Ûask self WWJD; meditation on Scripture
- § God honors *growth by sure degrees* and not the *quick fix* (v5) *see also Prov 13:11b*

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

MSQ3: Consider the events that led up to your becoming a Christian. Briefly describe your approximate age and the circumstances...

Give folks a chance to write down a few facts FIRST, then have them answer the six questions. Share their answers with a neighbor

Please answer these questions based on your recollection of what happened...

1. Did you come to the point in your life that you desired to make a choice? yes no
2. Was it a decision that: you made or someone made for you and forced you along?
3. Was it a decision that you: pondered long over made rather quickly?
4. Was it a decision that you: were glad you made regretted making later on?
5. Was it a decision that you: were not totally sure you made were convinced you had made?
6. Were you awarded salvation because of: your own merits God's grace alone?
7. Have you lived a perfect and holy life (no sin) since your salvation? yes no
8. Do you share the blame for any of the sin you committed since your salvation? yes no
So we all said that it was our decision, right? And solely based on God's grace and not our work, right? And we've definitely sinned since – even deliberately, right?

MSQ4: Based on your answers above, how do you reconcile the following verses?

Ephesians 1:3-6 NKJV

Which also echo 1 Peter 1:2, elect according to the foreknowledge of God

Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly places in Christ, ⁴ just as He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before Him in love, ⁵ having predestined us to adoption as sons by Jesus Christ to Himself, according to the good pleasure of His will, ⁶ to the praise of the glory of His grace, by which He made us accepted in the Beloved.

- § *God has blessed us (past tense) with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places (a future reward for us)*
 - *He blessed us with these blessings prior to creating planet Earth*
- § *He chose us in Him before He created planet Earth*
- § *He determined that we should be viewed by Him as holy and without blame before Him...because He loves us*
- § *He predestined us (with deliberate choice made ahead of time) to be adopted as sons (a legal adoption accomplished solely by the work of Jesus Christ) for the purpose of becoming His heirs*
- § *Why – because it pleased / pleases / will continue to please Him*
- § *Why? Because it brings Him glory to do this, and glory is given to the grace by which He has done it*
- § *And the net effects of all of these sole works of God is that we are made acceptable to Him in a love relationship*

So...was it our free will choice to accept His free gift of grace to become saved?

- or -

Was it His sole choice to select us (and we had no choice in the matter)?

- or -

NEITHER

- or -

BOTH?

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

The answer to the preceding question is made simple when we understand the physics involved...

Genesis 1:1-5; 14-19 NKJV

In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. 2 The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters. 3 Then God said, "Let there be light"; and there was light. 4 And God saw the light, that it was good; and God divided the light from the darkness. 5 God called the light Day, and the darkness He called Night. So the evening and the morning were the first day.

14 Then God said, "Let there be lights in the firmament of the heavens to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs and seasons, and for days and years; 15 and let them be for lights in the firmament of the heavens to give light on the earth"; and it was so. 16 Then God made two great lights: the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night. He made the stars also. 17 God set them in the firmament of the heavens to give light on the earth, 18 and to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness. And God saw that it was good. 19 So the evening and the morning were the fourth day.

MSQ5: According to Scripture, when did time (as we know it) begin? Who/what was present before it began?

God instituted time on the fourth day of creation, having already created the earth and light. Incidentally, He created interstellar space (2nd day) and plants, seeds, etc. on the 3rd day...interestingly enough, plants existed before there are time, the sun and photosynthesis from the sun....

God was present before He created time, and some of his creation had been created at that point.

Implications: God is OUTSIDE of time...

Revelation 21:1-4; 22:3-5 NKJV

Now I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away. Also there was no more sea. 2 Then I, John, saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. 3 And I heard a loud voice from heaven saying, "Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people. God Himself will be with them and be their God. 4 And God will wipe away every tear from their eyes; there shall be no more death, nor sorrow, nor crying. There shall be no more pain, for the former things have passed away."

22:3 And there shall be no more curse, but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it, and His servants shall serve Him. 4 They shall see His face, and His name shall be on their foreheads. 5 There shall be no night there: They need no lamp nor light of the sun, for the Lord God gives them light. And they shall reign forever and ever.

MSQ6: According to Scripture, when does time (as we know it) end? Who /what will be present after it ends?

Scholars argue over this one, for it appears that time as we know it ceases after the Great White Throne Judgment, and God establishes a new order of things, with the old order passing away (including time?). According to 22:5, we shall reign forever and ever, so for us, time will cease as we know it.

God, Jesus, New Jerusalem, His and Jesus' throne, His light, His new creation, His servants (us), and as stated previously, Gehenna Hell and its inmates in the outer darkness.

Implications: God, and now we are outside time...

MSQ7: According to physicists, time is a physical property, like gravity, size, etc. Is God subject to time? What is God's relationship to "time?"

God is not subject to time – just as the creator of something is not subject to his creation, but his creation to the one who creates it.

Apparently, according to Scripture, we are no longer subject to time either, or its limitations.

God is outside time, and therefore all of time, from the beginning to the end, is in His view. He can see all of it, or any portion of it, as he desires.

This point now makes sense: Peter 3:8 - But, beloved, do not forget this one thing, that with the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. NKJV

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Read Scriptures, discuss

Isaiah 46:9-10 NKJV

For I am God, and there is no other; I am God, and there is none like Me, 10 Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times things that are not yet done, Saying, 'My counsel shall stand, and I will do all My pleasure,'

Isaiah 57:15 NKJV

For thus says the High and Lofty One, Who inhabits eternity, whose name is Holy: "I dwell in the high and holy place..."

Revelation 22:13 NKJV

I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End, the First and the Last."

G O D
(inhabiting eternity)

Before there was time

T I M E T I M E T I M E T I M E T I M E
(humans inhabit the time domain)

After time ends

Because God is outside time entirely, He can see everything that has and will ever happen in time. We mortals, who inhabit the time domain, are subject to it. God, Who inhabits eternity, is not subject to it. He alone knows the beginning from the end, because He is the beginning and the end!

“Within the time domain, we are responsible, and we make our own choices. God alone, being outside time, knows the choices we will make before time even began. This is a paradox only while viewed from within the time domain, and results from our limited perspective. When we see things from God’s unlimited perspective (outside time altogether), there is no paradox. What we see is an incredible drama and adventure, one of a delicate courtship between the initiatives of God and the responses of our own free wills. It is a courtship which can, if we choose so to respond, result in a marriage supper and an eternity of intimate fellowship. Isn’t it appropriate that the Bible portrays God’s elect as *The Bride*? - Dr. Chuck Missler, The Sovereignty of Man, Koinonia House 1995

Proverbs 19:21 NKJV There are many plans in a man's heart, nevertheless the Lord's counsel - that will stand.

Proverbs 20:24 NKJV A man's steps are of the LORD; how then can a man understand his own way?

Proverbs 16:33 NIV The lot is cast into the lap, but its every decision is from the LORD.

Key Conclusions: We are told in Scripture that:

- § God is in control; *The smartest thing we can do is to hand control back to God!*
- § Nothing that happens surprises Him;
- § Nothing happens by accident; and
- § He already knows what will happen...

THREE THINGS THAT GOD CANNOT DO:

1. He cannot l_____ Û LIE
2. He cannot l_____ Û LEARN: He cannot be surprised by any event; He already knows what I'm about to do before I do it, therefore He cannot be "disappointed" in me (but I can hurt Him, when I sin...)
3. He cannot f_____ us to l_____ Him Û force; love

He desires our love out of our sovereign and free will – this is His ultimate desire, that we would love in response to Him first loving us...

God gave us WISDOM (His Son and His Living Word) to help guide our free will choices in this life.....



1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Ü this is the same words as are in 2 Corinthians 1:3

Verse 3: Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to His abundant mercy has begotten us again to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead...

- § according to His abundant mercy – *according to means to be measured against a standard. In this case, the standard is God’s abundant mercy. How abundant is a mercy that allowed a perfectly holy God to repeatedly reach out to a vile sinner who repeatedly rejected Him, slandered Him, mocked Him?*
- § begotten us again – *anagennao hemas - cause us to be born again; He alone was the one who did it, no works of our own, no merits of our own; He did it all. This is the new birth, being born again as Jesus discussed with Nicodemus.*
- § living hope – *zao alive, lively, living elpis to anticipate with pleasure, expectation and/or confidence the hope that we as believers have should cause us to look at life very differently than non-believers. We should have an anticipation, and excitement about living in the GRAND ADVENTURE and being counted worthy to participate in God’s plan for our lives...*
- § the focus of 1 Peter is not life after death but life after birth and our growing up!
- § it is not what God has done for us, but what we have done with what He’s given us!
- § the res result of the new birth is a *living hope*, which should govern us while we are al alive
- § instead, many Christians live as whi whiney ba baby Christians *with a litany of complaints*

Some get-honest questions to ask yourself:

1. Did God raise Jesus Christ so that I could wh whine and comp complain about things?
- we make it about whining and complaining when we focus our time and energy there – a baby does this
2. What is the ratio of my spe speech that is complaining about what I don’t have vs. being thankful about what He has done for me? *see additional notes page for verses on thanksgiving... whiners are so self-focused that they have no room to be thankful*
3. What percent of my time is spent on self- fo focused versus others-fo focused?
a sure sign of an immature Christian is to be self-focused
4. Is our citiz citizenship lived out like it is from heaven, or like it is on earth?
would the residents of Planet Earth know that you are a resident alien, or an earth-dweller?
5. Are my speech or actions characterized in feeling so sorry for myself?
another sign of an immature believer....

A Christian is Spirit-empowered...why do we make excuses for why we c’won’t? ÜÜÜ

Some additional thoughts to ponder...

- § Sadly, most believers never even ask themselves the key question: “How then should I live?”
- § If we were truly not tied to the earth as an “earth dweller” and our citizenship were lived out as it should be, then we would be able to live in the power of the Holy Spirit.
- § We have perhaps a beginner’s concept of what living in the Spirit looks like, but because we are too earthly-focused, we never allow that concept to mature into a grasp of living in the Spirit by allowing God to take hold of our lives.
- § We want to be in control, so we decide not to mature in this way.
- § God gives us plenty of things that we are able to do – because He has empowered us to do them – but we choose to live far below the Christian poverty line, in the less-abundant life. Perhaps it is time we wake up and GROW UP!

A poor workman blames his tools



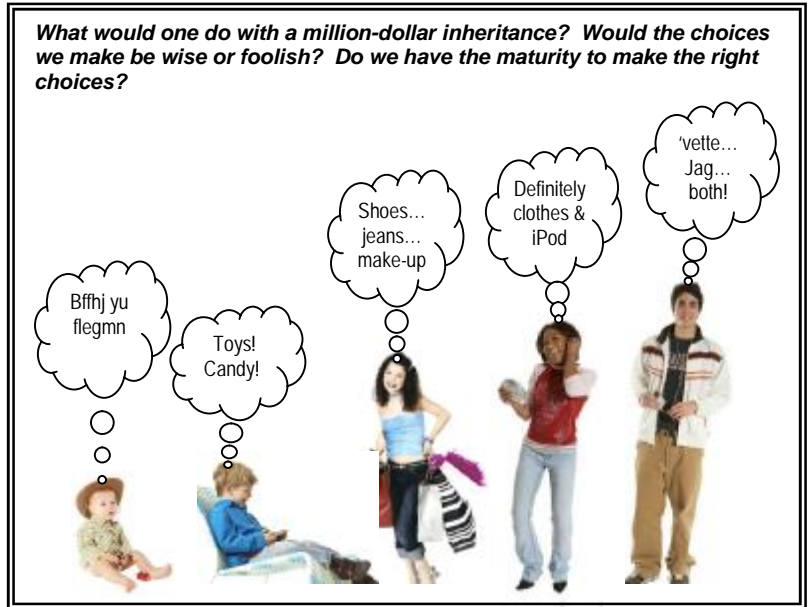
“Yeah...it is the BEST wrench ever made...so is the screwdriver...and 20 years of plumbing school. But these tools just don’t work right.”

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Verse 4: ...to an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled and that does not fade away, reserved in heaven for you...

Q4: What is an 'inheritance?'
Something someone else has worked for and then set aside for the beneficiary. Instead of using up the inheritance themselves, the one giving the inheritance has given the inheritance at their own expense.

Q5: What does our maturity level have to do with how we view / utilize an inheritance?
When we are too young or immature to know what to do with our inheritance, we will make very foolish choices. A baby cannot even formulate what an inheritance is, so s/he lives in complete ignorance of it. A child and teen squanders it.



- § Israel's inheritance is the land while a Christian's inheritance is eternal life with Jesus Christ
- § Our maturity in Christ determines the dec decisions we make about our inheritance.
- § My age: _____ Number of years I've been a Christian: _____ My life stage: _____

Life Stage	Description of Life Stage	How They Will Treat Their Inheritance
1. Baby Believer	Just or very recently saved	Ign _____ <i>Ignorance: likely ignorant of what it is; has no perceived value and therefore has a limited effect on life choices</i>
2. Child	Has begun to get a basic foundation in their faith	Awa <u>Awareness: is becoming aware of what eternal life is and is in awe of what God has done for them</u>
3. Adolescent	Has reached a point of thinking s/he knows best; beginning a battle to submit to authority	Con <u>Confusion: Takes for granted the 'future eternity thing' and believes that it is so far off that the now becomes a focus</u>
4. Teen	With greater freedom comes a greater pull from the world, secretly or openly rebellious	Wor <u>Worldly: becomes blinded to the future and lives for the now</u>
5. Young Adult	Beginning to recognize the value of submitting to God's authority	Reaw _____ <i>Reawakening: realizes that bad choices have led to harm and now begins to treasure the true riches of heaven</i>
6. Mature Adult	Spirit-filled; lives out the Christian life boldly, but not in own his/her own strength	Sol _____ <i>Sold out: sees the things of this earth as dross; the future inheritance is the most important possession</i>

Our inheritance is as indestructible as God's Word:

- § Can never corrupt - aphtharton
- § Can never be defiled - amiaranton
- § Can never fade away - amaranton

Peter uses three words, each beginning with the same letter and ending in the same sound, to describe our inheritance's permanence

It is reserved in heaven where God keeps watch over it!

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Verse 5: ... who are kept by the power of God through faith for salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.

Q6: What does it mean to have your inheritance "kept by the power of God?"

The Creator of all is the One Who is responsible to "keep" the inheritance (future promise). The answer comes down to understanding WHO God is, and His attributes. Faithful, Truthful, All powerful. All knowing.

Clearly there is no safer or more trustworthy Person to keep the inheritance. Therefore, it is guaranteed by all that God is, which makes it more secure than any earthly thing. No bank, fort, vault, bunker or the like has God's permanence. Once saved, always saved!

§ Kept – *phrououmenous* – *To guard, protect by a military guard, either to prevent a hostile invasion, or to keep the inhabitants of a besieged city from flight.*



Q7: Consider the maturity of the believer (from the chart on the prior page). At what stage does having your inheritance kept by God become meaningful to the believer?

Good discussion question

We have a low-level concept of what this means when we are at "Child" but really do not appreciate it at adolescent or teen. Only when we become a young adult does this become meaningful. As long as you are sold out to the world, your future inheritance and how it is kept and guarded is not that critical.

How God feels about those who are lukewarm towards Him:

Revelation 3:15-17 NKJV

"I know your works, that you are neither cold nor hot. I could wish you were cold or hot. 16 So then, because you are lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will vomit you out of My mouth.

Immaturity in Christ has its dangers, both from the world and from ourselves...

Three Tenses of Salvation and its Permanence

1 Peter 1:2-5 gives us all three tenses of salvation:

§ (v2, 3) Past: elect according to the foreknowledge of God; through the resurrection of Jesus Christ

§ (v3, 5) Present: has begotten us again; through faith for salvation

§ (v4, 5) Future: reserved in heave for you; to be revealed in the last time

Believers were saved (past tense) by God bef_ before the foundation of the world (Ephesians 1:4) ; they possess salvation n_ now (in the pre_ present tense) but this will be completely revealed to them in its full significance at the re_ return of Jesus Christ in the fu_ future (at the last time). At that point the "salvation of their souls" (1 Peter 1:9) will be completed.

1 Peter 1:2-5 gives us the permanence of that salvation:

§ salvation was determined by God the Father: according to the foreknowledge of God

§ it was sanctified by God the Holy Spirit: in sanctification of the Spirit

§ it was accomplished through God the Son: through the resurrection of Jesus Christ

§ it is guarded by God in heaven: reserved in heaven for you, who are kept by the power of God

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Peter's Program for Growing Up and Becoming a Mature Christian

Available to: All Christians who desire growth and are willing to submit to God's leadership

Principle: God never asks us to do something that He does not equip us to do

1. All Scripture is authored by God and was written down by men who were directed to write by God

2 Peter 1:20-21 NKJV

...knowing this first, that no prophecy of Scripture is of any private interpretation, 21 for prophecy never came by the will of man, but holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Spirit.

2. God empowers us to do His will and His work through His empowering

1 Timothy 1:12-14 NKJV

And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord who has enabled me, because He counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry, 13 although I was formerly a blasphemer, a persecutor, and an insolent man; but I obtained mercy because I did it ignorantly in unbelief. 14 And the grace of our Lord was exceedingly abundant, with faith and love which are in Christ Jesus.

Philippians 4:13 NKJV

I can do all things through Christ who strengthens me.

Ephesians 6:13 NKJV

Therefore take up the whole armor of God, that you may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand.

3. God's plan for us is to live on this planet as sojourners, living out our faith day by day

Habakkuk 2:4 NKJV

"Behold the proud, his soul is not upright in him; but the just shall live by his faith.

Romans 1:17 NKJV

For in it the righteousness of God is revealed from faith to faith; as it is written, "The just shall live by faith."

Hebrews 10:36-38 NKJV

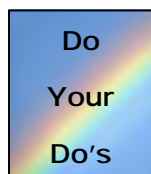
For you have need of endurance, so that after you have done the will of God, you may receive the promise: 37 "For yet a little while, and He who is coming will come and will not tarry. 38 Now the just shall live by faith; but if anyone draws back, My soul has no pleasure in him."

4. We are to be DOERS of the Word of God...and God reveals what He desires we do in His Word

James 1:22-25 NKJV

But be doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving yourselves. 23 For if anyone is a hearer of the word and not a doer, he is like a man observing his natural face in a mirror; 24 for he observes himself, goes away, and immediately forgets what kind of man he was. 25 But he who looks into the perfect law of liberty and continues in it, and is not a forgetful hearer but a doer of the work, this one will be blessed in what he does.

Peter's program for growing up and becoming mature Christians is found in his "DO" statements. For this reason, we've created a DOER'S JOURNAL to record each of the DO imperatives found in I & II Peter. Your DOER'S JOURNAL can be found at the back of your workbook.



Instructions: look at each of the DO statements from each lesson and remember that God never asks you to do something that He has not enabled you to do. Each day, pray over your "DO LIST" and ask God to create opportunities for you to do these things. Each day note how God has provided opportunities for you to GROW UP into maturity. Keep this journal as a record of your maturing throughout our study of I & II Peter.

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

3. Rejoice Through Your Trials

What does he know that we don't? Childlike faith???



Do you rejoice in all of your circumstances in life? While trials grieve us, grief should never overshadow the joy of knowing that we never face any trial alone!

1 Peter 1:6-17 NKJV

This must seem odd to the world, that mature Christians rejoice in trials – certainly a better witness than complaining...

In this you greatly rejoice, though now for a little while, if need be, you have been grieved by various trials, 7 that the genuineness of your faith, being much more precious than gold that perishes, though it is tested by fire, may be found to praise, honor, and glory at the revelation of Jesus Christ, 8 whom having not seen you love. Though now you do not see Him, yet believing, you rejoice with joy inexpressible and full of glory, 9 receiving the end of your faith — the salvation of your souls.

10 Of this salvation the prophets have inquired and searched carefully, who prophesied of the grace that would come to you, 11 searching what, or what manner of time, the Spirit of Christ who was in them was indicating when He testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ and the glories that would follow. 12 To them it was revealed that, not to themselves, but to us they were ministering the things which now have been reported to you through those who have preached the gospel to you by the Holy Spirit sent from heaven — things which angels desire to look into.

13 Therefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and rest your hope fully upon the grace that is to be brought to you at the revelation of Jesus Christ; 14 as obedient children, not conforming yourselves to the former lusts, as in your ignorance; 15 but as He who called you is holy, you also be holy in all your conduct, 16 because it is written, "Be holy, for I am holy." 17 And if you call on the Father, who without partiality judges according to each one's work, conduct yourselves throughout the time of your stay here in fear

Q1: True or false and why: A Christian's joy is independent of his or her circumstances.

True...and it is all about perspective. Note that the passage does not say that we will enjoy trials or want to plan more trials into our lives. Someone whose perspective is earth-focused will only look at the grief of the trial. Someone that is heaven focused will look at it in comparison to heaven and their inheritance there.

Note that verse 6 says "if need be that you have been grieved" suggesting that some trials may indeed grieve us but that we should look at them in comparison to (verse 9) eternity and the salvation of our souls

Q2: Why is it so difficult to hold God's perspectives as outlined in verses 6 – 8:

- § greatly rejoicing in trials
- § faith being more precious than gold
- § believing in Someone we do not see *Bis it really precious enough for us to suffer for it?*

Gold will be valueless in the marketplace of eternity...

Good discussion question...

We in America have been spared most of the trials of all believers because of the blood of our forefathers...

The purpose of trials:

- § to ref refine us into more mature Christians (verse 7)
 - § to prove the gen genuineness of our faith (verse 7)
 - § to enable us to become more effective min ministers to those who undergo similar trials (2 Corinthians 1:3-7)
- see additional notes page for Scripture reference*

Q3: What is meant by verse 9?

The end of our faith, meaning the end purpose or objective, which is the salvation of our souls. This implies what will happen when we are resurrected into our eternal bodies and are re-united with our Groom to be with Him forever. We don't see the salvation of our souls in this earthly lifetime...hence the key point about believing in Him whom we have not seen (verse 8) (Recall Jesus' words to Thomas in John 20:29) see additional notes page for Scripture

Û discuss quote...

"Genuine faith is not only of ultimate value to its possessor, but it will also bring praise, honor and glory to the One whose name all Christians bear: Our Lord Jesus Christ. Our joy becomes greater as we truly get to know Him, and not just know about Him."

Û discuss this point!



When is gold refined? When you can see your own image reflected in the metal. Similarly, you know that a Christian is refined when Christ's image is reflected in him / her.

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

'Salvation Rocks' in the Heavens Sometimes we get this very mistaken view that our spiritual forefathers were somehow taken by surprise at what God does... Amos 3:7
Verses 10: Of this salvation the prophets have inquired and searched carefully, who prophesied of the grace that would come to you,

All of the prophets throughout the ages have been searching the signs of the times in hopes that they would be the ones who saw God fulfill His promises of Messiah ruling in Jerusalem...

- § E Enoch spoke the oldest recorded human prophecy (Jude 14-15)
- § Abraham was a soj sojourner while he waited for it (Hebrews 11:8-10) *a resident alien*
- § Daniel looked for God to complete the ca captivity in his lifetime (Daniel 9:1-3)
- § The wise men were following the prophecy of B Balaam in seeking a s star (Numbers 24:15-17)
- § Jesus was quizzed by the d Disciples about it (Matthew 23:37-24:3)

Ever since God told humankind His plan of redemption, beginning in Genesis 3:15, God's prophets have all looked forward to the events that would fulfill His promise... Conversely, Satan has sought to counter His plan...

Verse 11: ...searching what, or what manner of time, the Spirit of Christ who was in them was indicating when He testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ and the glories that would follow.

Q2: According to this passage, what two things would be testified of? Who would do the testifying?
Specifically, Christ's sufferings (i.e., His crucifixion) and the glories that would follow His crucifixion (i.e.; what happened in Acts 2 with the outpouring of the Holy Spirit, miracles as witness of Him, etc.).

The Holy Spirit would do the testifying, fulfilling the passage in 2 Peter 1:20-21 and 2 Timothy 3:16-17

Q3: Cite the specific passages that are proof texts in the Old Testament of this testimony.

- § *Psalms 22 – words penned by David but seem to be written in the first person of Jesus Christ as He hung on the cross – opening and closing words of Psalm 22 are His first and last recorded words on the cross! Provides the medical detail of something that was invented 700 years after the words were penned!*
- § *Isaiah 53 (begins with last 4 verses of chapter 52) and in smack dab in the middle of what the Jews consider the holy of holies of venerated Scripture – again, vivid details prophesying His crucifixion.*
- § *Daniel 9:26 – prophesying that he would be executed for His people*
- § *Joel 2:28-32 – speaking of the day when the Holy Spirit would be given, and the future coming judgment*
- § *Psalms 16:8-11 – David's words regarding Christ's resurrection from Sheol and implied resurrection of believers*

MATURE BELIEVERS SHOULD KNOW THESE PASSAGES AND BE PREPARED TO TEACH THEM!

Verse 12: To them it was revealed that, not to themselves, but to us they were ministering the things which now have been reported to you through those who have preached the gospel to you by the Holy Spirit sent from heaven — things which angels desire to look into.

v12a – it was revealed (revelation) to the penmen, who recorded the words for Peter and his contemporaries to learn and know how to apply, and to all who have heard the Spirit-inspired Word of God. This verse documents that salvation comes through the agency of the Holy Spirit who draws people to God through preaching...

Q4: Explain the last part of verse 12. What are the implications of this?

This passage says that the angels are learning about salvation through us. Implications:

- § *They are viewing our actions as we respond to the truth of the Scripture*
- § *There is no time that we can act "in secret" and not be under observation!*
- § *We are teaching them, therefore; they are not all knowing (as we may mistakenly assume)*
- § *Angels are ministering spirits who minister to humans, protect us in spiritual warfare, etc., so is being a teacher by our actions a symbiotic obligation that we have to them?*
- § *Will we be held accountable at the Bema Seat for how effective we are in being a teacher to them?*
- § *God holds us accountable for what we know (what has been revealed to us) – to whom much is given, much is expected – so now that we know our roles as role models for teaching angels about salvation, we need to be found faithful, as is required in a steward – in a sense, we are stewards of the mysteries of God that have been revealed to us.*



1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

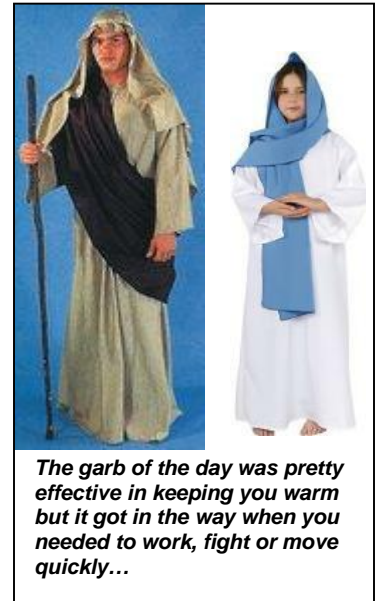
Your First Five Do's: Gird Up the Loins of Your Mind

1 Peter 1:13-16 NKJV

Therefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and rest your hope fully upon the grace that is to be brought to you at the revelation of Jesus Christ; 14 as obedient children, not conforming yourselves to the former lusts, as in your ignorance; 15 but as He who called you is holy, you also be holy in all your conduct, 16 because it is written, "Be holy, for I am holy."

Q5: In this passage, identify and list the five Do's in order.

1. ***Gird up the loins of your mind***
2. ***Be sober***
3. ***Rest (or have) hope***
4. ***Don't conform yourself to your former lusts like when you were unsaved***
5. ***Be holy in all your conduct***



In the Greek, numbers 1, 2 and 4 are participles, and are subordinate to the commands: have hope and be holy.

Verse 13: Therefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and rest your hope fully upon the grace that is to be brought to you at the revelation of Jesus Christ...

Q6: What specifically is meant by the metaphor, "gird up the loins of your mind?" How does this relate to the command about the Passover in Exodus 12:11 and the warrior's imperative of Ephesians 6:14?

Define "girding" and what a girdle was – a loincloth; you tucked your robe in the girdle and it looked like diaper

- § A girdle is the foundational garment (department stores still have a foundations dep't where they sell girdles)
- § It took away all of the excess cloth ("stuff") that would get in the way and affect your mobility
- § It speaks of preparation and being ready to move without notice; imminent readiness

Define loins: the area between the belly button and upper thigh

- § This is a human's area of greatest vulnerability from disease, infection from wounds, etc.

Thus the statement metaphorically means to prepare the vulnerable areas of your mind for imminent battle

- § The Jews were told to be ready to leave Egypt at a moment's notice as they ate the first Passover meal (loins girt and shoes on – Exodus 12:11)
- § All believers are in a full-time spiritual battle and are told to put on God's whole armor (He supplies, they put on – verse 13). The foundational garment (girdle) is truth, which according to John 17:17 is the Word.

Therefore, our minds must be fully prepared to LIVE OUT what the Word says...and that is spiritual maturity!



Verse 14:...as obedient children, not conforming yourselves to the former lusts, as in your ignorance;

- § as obedient children: literally, children of obedience
 - o versus Ephesians 2:1-3, 5:6, Colossians 3:6 children (sons) of disobedience; see add'l notes
 - o you become characterized by obedience to God's Word and the Holy Spirit's leading
- § why? So that you are not conformed to the woorld (under Satan's power and programming)



o same admonition as in Romans 12:2 - and do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God.

In the same way that you gird up the loins of your mind, you also renew it

- § When you were unsaved you sinned in ignorant; if you return to that lifestyle once you are saved, you are disobedient and act like a child of wrath...

ignorant – Gr: agnoi, agnostic; Latin: ignoramus

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Verse 15-16: but as He who called you is holy, you also be holy in all your conduct, 16 because it is written, "Be holy, for I am holy."

- § This is NOT a wo works command, because we didn't earn our holiness
- § Called – *kalesanta*; *the past tense form of kaleo, to call; literally, has already called*
- § Our lifestyle should reflect on who our who our father is
- § Why? *because each of us is called to be a witness of Jesus' and an ambassador*
Ū Jesus taught that we could know the character of the Father by knowing His
- § Jesus said: He who has seen me has seen the Father (John 14:9) *character*
- § Being holy starts from the inside out, at the moment of salvation
- § "Be holy for I am holy"



a chip off the ol' block!

Leviticus 11:44 NKJV

For I am the LORD your God. You shall therefore consecrate yourselves, and you shall be holy; for I am holy.

Leviticus 20:7-8 NKJV

Consecrate yourselves therefore, and be holy, for I am the LORD your God. 8 And you shall keep My statutes, and perform them: I am the LORD who sanctifies you.

Leviticus 20:26 NKJV

And you shall be holy to Me, for I the LORD am holy, and have separated you from the peoples, that you should be Mine.

- § consecrate: *qadash*, *To cause to be wholly clean; to dedicate – prepare - purify ones' self*

Q7: How did God direct His people to be holy during the time of the law?

- § *A deliberate act of cleansing and preparation*
- § *The individual dedicated himself/herself to God*
- § *They were to be separated from other peoples who were not committed to God (the world's system)*

Q8: Is it possible to "be holy" today? Why or why not?

- § *While we are still in the flesh, we cannot be absolutely holy*
- § *However, God never directs us to do something that He does not give us the ability to do*
- § *Thus we have to look at the*

this is our call to the right inner life and outer walk...

Our Chief Impediment to Holiness: The Battle of the Senses



As human beings, we've been trained throughout our entire lives to rely on our senses in order to live each day. Yet in the real combat that is raging around us, our senses are useless in the invisible war. [Ephesians 6:12-13 NKJV - For we do not wrestle against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this age, against spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places. 13 Therefore take up the whole armor of God, that you may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand.]

All believers must remember that they are not of this world, but merely sojourners here, awaiting that future Day when He returns (or calls us home). The present ruler of this planet is one who deals in deceit and lies, and one of his favorite methods is to use a believer's senses against him. God warns us about this in Jesus' own words: [Mark 13:22-23 NKJV "For false christs and false prophets will rise and show signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the elect. 23 But take heed; see, I have told you all things beforehand."]

You are undoubtedly familiar with the adage: believe half of what you see and none of what you hear. In the spiritual battle, believe only what is consistent with the Word of God. God give us the answer about how to avoid getting duped in the spiritual battle: [2 Corinthians 5:7 NKJV "For we walk by faith, not by sight"] and [2 Corinthians 2:9,11 NKJV For to this end I also wrote, that I might put you to the test, whether you are obedient in all things. 11 lest Satan should take advantage of us; for we are not ignorant of his devices.]

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

This World is Not My Home, I'm Just a Passin' Through



A careful study of the "earth dwellers" during the Tribulation period on earth reveals the attitudes of those who are completely sold out to the system of this world (Revelation 9:20-21; 16:9-11), in stark contrast to those who placed themselves at risk to remain true to the testimony of God (Revelation 6:9-11). A mark of a mature believer is that he or she is not married to this life on earth...

Verse 17: And if you call on the Father, who without partiality judges according to each one's work, conduct yourselves throughout the time of your stay here in fear...

§ without partiality - *a-pro-so-pol-ep-tos*
aprosopoleptos
impartial, does not play favorites, unbiased, provides an equal opportunity, accepts all who 'qualify'

Q9: What are the implications of judging without partiality, compared to the world's system in which we live?

absolute fairness, not capricious, take it to the bank, indeed the unchangeable God – will always give me a fair hearing, will always keep His word -VS- situational ethics, shifting morality and standards, politics, rise and fall of nations; weather conditions; people we live with who are moody, mercurial, bi-polar!

Our God Does Not Play Favorites!
According to Scripture, our God does not have double standards or play favorites in:

- § people groups or national origin – Acts 10:24
- § rewarding according to actual deeds – Romans 2:11-16
- § showing preference for economic status – Ephesians 6:5-9
- § holding all accountable to do right – Colossians 3:22-25
- § wanting ALL people to be saved – 1 Timothy 2:4
- § judging according to actual deeds – 1 Peter 1:17

Conducting ourselves during "our stay here" in rev reverent fear is evidenced by three things:

- § a tender cons conscience, *Q: what is the evidence of this?*
- § a watchfulness against temp temptation, and *Q: what does this look like?*
- § avoiding things that would displease God *Q: How do we know? Read the Word!*
Heaven and not *Earth*

Our "stay here" refers to the fact that we are citizens of _____ and not _____

An "In-Tents" Lesson From Our Spiritual Forefather, Abraham

Hebrews 11:8-10 NKJV

By faith Abraham obeyed when he was called to go out to the place which he would receive as an inheritance. And he went out, not knowing where he was going. 9 By faith he dwelt in the land of promise as in a foreign country, dwelling in tents with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise; 10 for he waited for the city which has foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

Why did the Bill Gates of his age live in tents instead of a nice mansion (or three)? After all, he had his parent's villas in Ur and Haran (Genesis 11:28-31); one of the world's most beautiful women as his wife (Genesis 12:11); vast holdings in livestock, silver, gold (Genesis 13:2) and land (Genesis 13:14-17; 15:18); his own private army (Genesis 14:14); was honored by prominent kings (Genesis 14:17-21); and was given an overwhelming promise about his future by God that he should be the father of many nations and his memory would live on for millennia (Genesis 17:1-8).

"Father Abraham, as one of the richest men in the world...why do you live in a tent?"



Perhaps the answer can be found in the dialog between God and Abraham in Genesis 15:1-6 (NKJV):
After these things the word of the LORD came to Abram in a vision, saying, "Do not be afraid, Abram. I am your shield, your exceedingly great reward." 2 But Abram said, "Lord GOD, what will You give me, seeing I go childless, and the heir of my house is Eliezer of Damascus?" 3 Then Abram said, "Look, You have given me no offspring; indeed one born in my house is my heir!" 4 And behold, the word of the LORD came to him, saying, "This one shall not be your heir, but one who will come from your own body shall be your heir." 5 Then He brought him outside and said, "Look now toward heaven, and count the stars if you are able to number them." And He said to him, "So shall your descendants be." 6 And he believed in the LORD, and He accounted it to him for righteousness. *Abraham withstood the trial of prosperity and remained faithful to God!*

Where do you call home? That's where you live and who you are...and what you will become!

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)



4. A Purchase in Blood (and What it Bought)

1 Peter 1:18-25 (NKJV)

Knowing that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, like silver or gold, from your aimless conduct received by tradition from your fathers, 19 but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot. 20 He indeed was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you 21 who through Him believe in God, who raised Him from the dead and gave Him glory, so that your faith and hope are in God.

22 Since you have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit in sincere love of the brethren, love one another fervently with a pure heart, 23 having been born again, not of corruptible seed but incorruptible, through the word of God which lives and abides forever, 24 because "All flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of the grass. The grass withers, and its flower falls away, 25 But the word of the LORD endures forever." Now this is the word which by the gospel was preached to you.

Verse 18: knowing that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, like silver or gold, from your aimless conduct received by tradition from your fathers

Ü To be redeemed by paying a ransom

§ redeemed – elutroothete *a very Jewish concept Ü silver is Levitically the blood money Jesus betrayed for 30 pcs silver*

Q1: What are the positives and negatives of living according to the traditions in which you were raised?

If they were traditions that pointed you closer to God, and they were explained as such (the why behind the what) then they were helpful; conversely, if they were observed like most traditions, where the form is observed without understanding the substance, they are harmful! In the passage above, the tradition of observing the payment of a half-shekel of silver as a ransom price to be paid for one's sins had long lost its original meaning, which was to point to the Blood of the Perfect lamb that would be paid at Calvary. Instead, the easy thing to sacrifice is money without any thought for what lies behind it. Only by living in the newness of realization of what Christ paid for your ransom can you counter the pull of the world (the battle of the senses)

Mature believers seek to understand the tru___ behind the tradition (rather than just go blindly along with it) and then modify their behavior because of that tru___. *Ü TRUTH X2*

Tradition: Redemption with silver



Exodus 30:11b-14 NKJV

Then the LORD spoke to Moses, saying: 12 "When you take the census of the children of Israel for their number, then every man shall give a ransom for himself to the LORD, when you number them, that there may be no plague among them when you number them. 13 This is what everyone among those who are numbered shall give: half a shekel according to the shekel of the sanctuary (a shekel is twenty gerahs). The half-shekel shall be an offering to the LORD.

Passover Requirement

- ___ lamb without a spot or blemish
- ___ inspected and prepared on the 10th of Nisan
- ___ killed in the evening of the 14th of Nisan
- ___ blood on the doorposts
- ___ roasted with fire



Verse 19-21: but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot. 20 He indeed was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you 21 who through Him believe in God, who raised Him from the dead and gave Him glory, so that your faith and hope are in God.

The truth behind the tradition of the Passover Lamb:

Christ was our Passover Lamb – presented on the 10th of Nisan, killed on the 14th.

If we understand the truth behind the tradition, and understand that God foreordained it before he set planet Earth into space, before He began time itself, we can just begin to understand the great lengths that God went to for our personal salvation! All was foreseen and prepared beforehand! At God's proper time Christ was manifest – made known in the flesh – Emmanuel –

Q2: What was God's purpose for all of this, according to verse 21?

That our faith (pistis – conviction, persuasion, assurance you act on) and hope (elpis [el-peece] – anticipation with pleasure, looking forward with anticipation) might be solidly founded in God.

It comes down to traditions of men versus the truth of God – and how we choose to spend our lives here between the two of them. Traditions lovingly handed down over the generations and carefully observed by loving families still do not guarantee the truth – we must discern the difference.

The Solid Rock: Our hope is built on nothing less than Jesus and His righteousness!

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Verse 22: Since you have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit in sincere love of the brethren, love one another fervently with a pure heart...

§ purified souls – *hagnizo psuche*

Hagnizo – to make clean, ceremonially or morally; purify ones self
Psuche – the sentient and rational part of a person; mind, “psyche”

Q3: What are the marks of a mature believer, according to this passage?

A purified soul and a fervent love for fellow believers

Q4: Flowchart the process (steps) of “purifying your souls:”

1. *Read the Word*
2. *Understand the Word*
3. *Obey the Word and allow it to modify your behavior*
4. *as a result of living it out, you purify your mind*

without hypocrisy; unfeigned

§ sincere – *anypokratia*

Same message, 2100 years apart

Psalm 119:9-16 NKJV

9 How can a young man cleanse his way? By taking heed according to Your word.

10 With my whole heart I have sought You; Oh, let me not wander from Your commandments!

11 Your word I have hidden in my heart, That I might not sin against You.

12 Blessed are You, O LORD! Teach me Your statutes.

13 With my lips I have declared All the judgments of Your mouth.

14 I have rejoiced in the way of Your testimonies, As much as in all riches.

15 I will meditate on Your precepts, And contemplate Your ways.

16 I will delight myself in Your statutes; I will not forget Your word.



Q5: How does one develop “sincere love?”

- | | |
|-----------|---|
| Recognize | <i>Recognize – Remember – Remove – Reveal – Restore - Release</i> |
| | § <i>recognize the depths from which Christ had to go to love you</i> |
| | § <i>remember that He loved you when you hated Him</i> |
| Remember | § <i>remove all evil and insincere thoughts about a fellow believer</i> |
| | § <i>reveal your heart and thinking in accordance with God’s Word</i> |
| Remove | • <i>ask honestly if I am withholding from a fellow believer what Christ freely gave me</i> |
| | • <i>ask why you feel negatively about someone – ask God to reveal it to you</i> |
| Reveal | § <i>restore – seek out the other person and have the honest discussion</i> |
| | § <i>release the other person, in front of God, from your animosity</i> |

Restore

Release



Key points

- § Just as trials refine my faith, obedience to God’s Word refines my character.
- § I can only discover the joy of obedience after I’ve purified myself by living according to God’s Word. *it will always be impossible to live for God and also live for yourself!*
- § If my life has truly changed, then my relationships with other believers is an evidence of it.

§ A pure love can only come from a purified heart.

§ A pure heart is evidenced by pure motives and seeking to give more than it gets.

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Being born again is what makes it possible to love fervently – it is not anything from planet Earth!



Verses 23-25: having been born again, not of corruptible seed but incorruptible, through the word of God which lives and abides forever, 24 because "All flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of the grass. The grass withers, and its flower falls away, 25 But the word of the LORD endures forever." Now this is the word which by the gospel was preached to you.

Q5: According to verse 23, what is/are a Christian's inheritance(s)?

- § **Being born again**
- § **Incorruptible seed**
- § **The Word of God**

Q6: Can an incorruptible seed be corrupted? What are the conclusions that you must draw (in context) from this claim from God's Word?

Incorruptible seed is kept that way by God, so it is impossible to become corrupted unless he says so...which in this case, He says NO.

Implications: eternal security since It's ultimate success rests on the integrity of the guarantor. Therefore, the change(s) wrought by being born again must endure forever! Thus we, in possession of such truth, must be forever affected by the life-changing power of what it says...

Peter then quotes Isaiah 40:6-8...let's look at that passage in its wider context...

Ú context is tied to the surety of Jesus' ultimate fulfillment of God's promise to Israel, and hence His trustworthiness as a keeper of His promises

Isaiah 40:1-11 NKJV

"Comfort, yes, comfort My people! "Says your God. 2 "Speak comfort to Jerusalem, and cry out to her, that her warfare is ended, that her iniquity is pardoned; for she has received from the LORD's hand Double for all her sins."

3 The voice of one crying in the wilderness: "Prepare the way of the LORD; Make straight in the desert a highway for our God. 4 Every valley shall be exalted and every mountain and hill brought low; the crooked places shall be made straight and the rough places smooth; 5 the glory of the LORD shall be revealed, and all flesh shall see it together; for the mouth of the LORD has spoken."

6 The voice said, "Cry out!" And he said, "What shall I cry?" "All flesh is grass, and all its loveliness is like the flower of the field. 7 The grass withers, the flower fades, because the breath of the LORD blows upon it; surely the people are grass. 8 The grass withers, the flower fades, but the word of our God stands forever."

9 O Zion, You who bring good tidings, get up into the high mountain; O Jerusalem, you who bring good tidings, lift up your voice with strength, lift it up, be not afraid; say to the cities of Judah, "Behold your God!"

10 Behold, the Lord GOD shall come with a strong hand, and His arm shall rule for Him; behold, His reward is with Him, and His work before Him. 11 He will feed His flock like a shepherd; He will gather the lambs with His arm, and carry them in His bosom, and gently lead those who are with young.

Q: when will Jerusalem's warfare be ended and her iniquity pardoned? A: at His return

Double Ú orientalism illustrate it

Q: whom does this speak of? A: John the Baptist

anticipatory

comparison between the weak and dying flesh and the Word of God...hence the Peter passage speaks to the sure thing of eternity versus the fleeting thing of the here and now (we get tricked into thinking LINEARLY, tomorrow will be like today...)

nearer His return Jerusalem will once again be the voice that God uses to speak to the rest of the world...and we've all heard it, since 1948!

Speaks of His return

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

5. Growing Up in Our Attitudes and Speech

1 Peter 21:1-3 (NKJV)

Therefore, laying aside all malice, all deceit, hypocrisy, envy, and all evil speaking, 2 as newborn babes, desire the pure milk of the word, that you may grow thereby, 3 if indeed you have tasted that the Lord is gracious.

Therefore - *Find out what it is there for!*
Refers to 1:23 Ú

§ Being b born a again

§ Rep repentance is called for

Laying aside - *apothemenoi* *Greek work is used in conjunction with taking off a garment (a sweaty, stained, reeking, filthy t-shirt)*

Other places translated "put off" "set aside"

à see additional notes page for these verses

§ Similar uses in Ephesians 4:22,25 and Colossians 3:8



Like a soiled garment, have you laid aside malice, deceit, hypocrisy, envy and evil speaking, so that you could grow up?



Q1: How many times is "all" used in verse 1? What is the significance of its multiple uses?

All is used three times - to get our attention; 3 = number of the trinity >>> are these three very bad and related sins?

Five Sins of Attitudes and Speech That Drive Wedges Between Believers

Word	Greek	Meaning	What it looks like in my life when I do it
Malice	<i>Kakian</i>	Wicked ill will; the desire to inflict pain, harm or injury to others	<i>Give time to work on this in the session</i>
Deceit (guile)	<i>dolon</i>	Deliberate dishonesty designed to deceive or trick others; seduction; the opposite of being a fiduciary	
Hypocrisies	<i>hypokrisis</i>	Pretending to be something that you are not; double-hearted; lying	
Envy	<i>phthonous</i>	Resentful in your heart about what others have	
Evil Speakings (slander, gossip)	<i>katalalias</i>	Gossip; spreading rumors, lies spoken with the intent to harm; backbiting	

§ Three of them are plural *The last three - suggests that they are abundant?*

§ Deceit and hypocrisy are twins - by deceit a person is wronged, and by hypocrisy he is deceived

§ Our attitudes reflect our hearts and drive our speech - Matthew 12:34-35 and Luke 6:45-46:

For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks. A good man out of the good treasure of his heart brings forth good things, and an evil man out of the evil treasure brings forth evil things.

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

-----x x x x x x-----

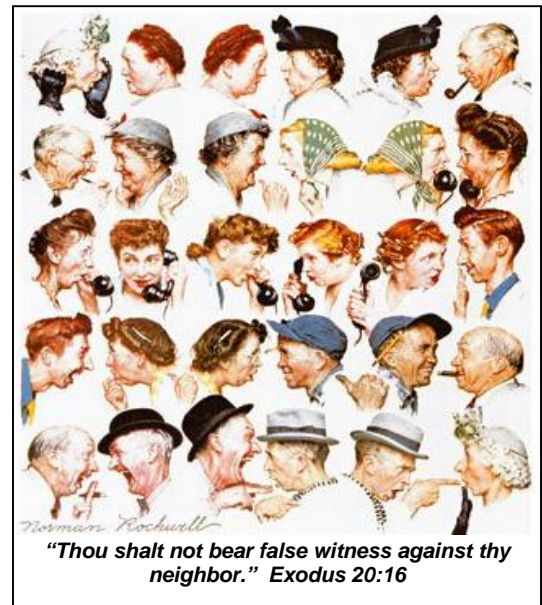
Mini Study 2: The Most Hurtful of Sins?

MSQ1: Why is gossip the most hurtful sin of all?

MSQ2: Why is it a violation of Exodus 20:16?

Consider well God's perspective of gossip:

Exodus 20:16 You shall not bear false witness against your neighbor.



Leviticus 19:16 You shall not go about as a talebearer among your people

Proverbs 11:13 A talebearer reveals secrets, but he who is of a faithful spirit conceals a matter.

Proverbs 17:9 He who covers a transgression seeks love, but he who repeats a matter separates friends.



Proverbs 18:6-8 A fool's lips enter into contention, and his mouth calls for blows. v7 A fool's mouth is his destruction, and his lips are the snare of his soul. v8 The words of a talebearer are like tasty trifles, and they go down into the inmost body.

Proverbs 20:19 He who goes about as a talebearer reveals secrets; therefore do not associate with one who flatters with his lips.

Proverbs 26:20-22 Where there is no wood, the fire goes out; and where there is no talebearer, strife ceases. v21 As charcoal is to burning coals, and wood to fire, so is a contentious man to kindle strife. v22 The words of a talebearer are like tasty trifles, and they go down into the inmost body.

James 4:11-12 Do not speak evil of one another, brethren. He who speaks evil of a brother and judges his brother, speaks evil of the law and judges the law. But if you judge the law, you are not a doer of the law but a judge. v12 There is one Lawgiver, who is able to save and to destroy. Who are you to judge another?

James 2:13 For judgment is without mercy to the one who has shown no mercy. Mercy triumphs over judgment.

James 3:6 And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity. The tongue is so set among our members that it defiles the whole body, and sets on fire the course of nature; and it is set on fire by hell.

-----x x x x x x-----

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Verse 2-3: as newborn babes, desire the pure milk of the word, that you may grow thereby, 3 if indeed you have tasted that the Lord is gracious.

Q2: How dependent is a newborn baby on milk?

Its very life depends on its next feeding

As a newborn is desperate for milk, we are to be desperate for the pure Word

Desire – *epipothéo* - *intense and urgent craving, earnestly desire, yearn for, lust after*

Sincere – *adolon* - *unadulterated (nothing added to it), sincere*

§ Contrasted with *deceit* (Gr: *dolon*) *from verse 1*
God's word does not deceive, neither should a Spirit led and mature believer



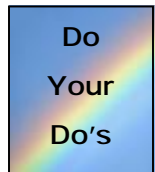
Q3: What is the “pure milk of the word?”

The basic, foundational doctrines of God. In a sense, the simpler tenets of the faith: salvation leading to life change, becoming a disciple of Christ

A baby must spend time on the milk before s/he can handle solid food; we ought to get grounded in the basics before we move to solid food as well. However, too often we remain on the bottle and not getting on solid food...

Q4: What do the actions of verse 1 have to do with the actions of verse 2?

You have to get rid of the junk in your life (from God's perspective) before you can begin to grow. As a brand new believer, you must immediately seek to gain a good foundation before you can handle to solid food, and survive in a world led by Satan, which hates you and wants to see you not become a mature believer.



Q5: What is the purpose of feeding on the “pure milk of the word?”

1. *So that you have a foundation for growth, and*
2. *So that you actually GROW UP and MATURE as a believer*
 - a. *Mature believers are useful for God*
 - b. *They are able to handle His assignments*
 - c. *They are able to put on the whole armor of God and stand*

Peter builds on Psalm 34:8: *Oh, taste and see that the LORD is good; blessed is the man who trusts in Him!*

Q6: using 1 Peter 2:2-3 and Psalm 34:8, explain the cycle of tasting, seeing and trusting as it relates to growing up into maturity.

When you taste, you take an initial sample. Based on your taste, you then see (behold) and understand that the source of the good taste is God. Now that you can see the source, you can trust it because of God's character.

As a mature believer, you trust God enough to believe in things that you cannot see or are in contradiction to what you are seeing (remembering that this world is under the power of Satan, and he seeks to deceive believers so as to mute their testimony). You take Him at His word and do things that might not make sense to the world, but you trust Him anyway. EXAMPLE - TITHING

Nothing is more dangerous to Satan that a mature believer living out his discipleship!

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

6. Growing Up as a Living Stone

1 Peter 21:4-8 (NKJV)

Coming to Him as to a living stone, rejected indeed by men, but chosen by God and precious, 5 you also, as living stones, are being built up a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ.

6 Therefore it is also contained in the Scripture, "Behold, I lay in Zion a chief cornerstone, elect, precious, and he who believes on Him will by no means be put to shame."

7 Therefore, to you who believe, He is precious; but to those who are disobedient, "The stone which the builders rejected has become the chief cornerstone," 8 and "A stone of stumbling and a rock of offense."

They stumble, being disobedient to the word, to which they also were appointed.

Û statue of Jesus overlooking Rio de Janeiro

Û briefly cover



Recall our study of Matthew 16 (page 4), where Jesus declared to Peter;

"And I also say to you that you are **Peter**, and on this **rock** I will build My church, and the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it?"

It is clear by the text that Peter understood Jesus' words that Jesus was referring to Himself as THE ROCK upon which the then-future church would be built. For the last two thousand years those who have accepted Christ as their personal savior have held a unique relationship to THE ROCK, that of being a LIVING STONE...

Verse 4: Coming to Him as to a living stone, rejected indeed by men, but chosen by God and precious...

Coming - *proserchomai* - *Draw near to as to worship; come unto; approach*

§ The specific tense of the word suggests a habi habitual and pers personal approach to Him

§ The first step in a relationship is fell fellowship, spending time with and getting to know Him

§ When we draw near to Him and He promises to draw near to us

James 4:8 (NKJV): Draw near to God and He will draw near to you.

§ God never for forces a relationship...as much as He desires it!

1 Timothy 2:3-4 (NKJV) For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Savior, 4 who desires all men to be saved and to come to the knowledge of the truth. *Û realize that God never gets what He wants...*

How well do you KNOW Him? Three things that God cannot do:

What He Cannot Do:	Scriptural Basis:	Implications for You and Me:
He cannot <u>Lie</u>	<u>Titus 1:2</u> - in hope of eternal life which God, who cannot lie, promised before time began <u>Hebrews 6:18</u> - ...it is impossible for God to lie...	§ <i>Everything He says in His Word, no matter wild it seems, is true</i> § <i>We are who He says we are – more than conquerors, etc. Romans 8:28-39</i>
He cannot <u>LEARN</u>	<u>1 John 3:20</u> - God is greater than our heart, and knows all things. <u>Psalm 147:5</u> - Great is our Lord, and mighty in power; His understanding is infinite.	§ <i>If He cannot learn, then He cannot be surprised at anything that happens, including what I might do to sin or disappoint Him</i> § <i>All my sins were yet future when He died on the cross for me...</i>
<u>LOVE</u> He cannot force you to <u>love</u> Him	<u>Psalm 10:4</u> - The wicked in his proud countenance does not seek God; God is in none of his thoughts. <u>Romans 1:29b-30a</u> - They are gossips, slanderers, God-haters, insolent, arrogant and boastful; they invent ways of doing evil...	§ <i>He gives me complete freedom of choice.</i> § <i>He loves me enough to allow me to not love Him back, and would rather I not than to force me.</i> § <i>He is not looking for anything but genuine love, since He has the capability to force anything He wants...</i>

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

There is TRUTH IN TENSION in these statements: *Familiarity with these breeds cursory examination...*

Coming to Him as a living stone, rejected indeed by men, chosen by God and precious (1 Peter 2:4)

The stone which the builders rejected has become the chief cornerstone (Psalm 118:22)

- § Man's view is - *"I'm in charge, so I evaluate and I therefore I reject..."*
- § God's view is - *"This is My Son, in Whom I am well pleased..."*
- § When you adopt God's view - *by coming to Him, you are accepting Him, therefore God accepts you and therefore we are "the elect" (1 Peter 1:1) and valued by God (1 Peter 1:18)*

Verse 5: you also, as living stones, are being built up a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ.

- § living - zoontes *zoo - living God, living water, living fountain, man shall not live by bread alone as LIVING stones, then our lives must reflect the LIVIBG God, from Whom flows LIVING WATER*
- § stones - lithos *lithos, not petros ("You are Petros (little rock) and upon this Rock I will build my church). Same word as verse 4, which identifies the living stone (singular) as Christ, whereas verse 5 states we are OF THE SAME SUBSTANCE as Christ! Staggering!*
- § built up - oikodomeo *To be built up, edify, same word as in: the man who built his house on the ROCK (Matt 7:24), the STONE which the BUILDERS rejected (Psalm 118 & gospels), upon this ROCK I will build my church (Matt 16:18)--I Peter is last book where this word is used...(2:5,7)*

Q1: What are the 3 purposes of these "living stones" and what does each mean?

- § *To be building material in the church, which Christ spoke of, built upon Him as a sure foundation (the ROCK) and united by the mortar of love and unity (fellowship)*
 - *A living stone means that we are to perform this objective while we are alive*
- § *To be a holy priesthood, not only as the building of the church but serving in it*
 - *Priests were chosen by God, not by man (Heb 5:9-10)*
 - *All believers are priests - Revelation 1:6, 1 Peter 2:9*
 - *As a priest, you need no mediator other than Jesus Christ to approach God directly (1 Timothy 2:5)*
- § *The offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God because of Jesus Christ*
 - *Our sacrifice will be acceptable to God when we are HOLY (through the blood of Christ)*
 - § *Implies preparation on our part to "get holy"*
 - § *Christian's bar of soap: 1 John 1:9*
 - *The implication here is that because our sacrifices will be acceptable to God because of Christ's finished work, then we can approach the throne BOLDLY*

Joining the "living stones" together:

Hebrews 5:9-10 NKJV

And having been perfected, He (Christ) became the author of eternal salvation to all who obey Him, 10 called by God as High Priest "according to the order of Melchizedek,"

Revelation 1:5-6 NKJV

To Him who loved us and washed us from our sins in His own blood, 6 and has made us kings and priests to His God and Father

1 Peter 2:9 NKJV

But you are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, His own special people, that you may proclaim the praises of Him

1 Timothy 2:5 NKJV

For there is one God and one Mediator between God and men, the Man Christ Jesus

1 John 1:7,9 NKJV

But if we walk in the light as He is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin. 9 If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

Hebrews 4:16 NKJV

Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.



1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)



A cornerstone joints two walls of a building together and is generally the first stone laid in the wall of a new building. A cornerstone points to the visible support upon which the rest of the building relies for strength and support.

Verse 6: Therefore it is also contained in the Scripture, "Behold, I lay in Zion a chief cornerstone, elect, precious, and he who believes on Him will by no means be put to shame."

Therefore – ties this point to coming to Jesus as the Rock and being built up into Him...

Q2: Who is the one laying the cornerstone, who is the cornerstone? *God lays it*

The cornerstone is Jesus

It is the chief cornerstone, not a regular one (a is an implied THE)

It is laid in Zion (Jerusalem)

Quoted from I saiah 28:6 (literal Hebrew):

"...Behold, I lay for a foundation in Zion, a stone, a stone tried, a cornerstone precious, a sure foundation..."

§ put to shame - kataishuno *To shame down, disgrace, dishonor, confound*

The structure of the Greek is a double negative referring emphatically to the future – better rendered: never indeed will they be shamed – a sure scriptural promise of ultimate victory for those who trust in Christ

Verses 7-8: Therefore, to you who believe, He is precious; but to those who are disobedient, "The stone which the builders rejected has become the chief cornerstone," 8 and "A stone of stumbling and a rock of offense." They stumble, being disobedient to the word, to which they also were appointed.

§ Peter quotes Psalm 118:22 for verse 7 and I saiah 8:14 for verse 8

§ Jesus also quoted Psalm 118:22 to the Pharisees in Matthew 21:42, which spoke of Himself

Q3: Using verses 6-8, compare and contrast the sharp differences between those who believe and those who do not.

Those who believe on Him	Those who are disobedient
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> - <i>belief</i> - <i>obedience</i> - <i>will not be put to shame</i> - <i>Jesus is precious (of ultimate value)</i> - <i>they do not stumble</i> - <i>they were elect, chosen</i> 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> - <i>unbelief</i> - <i>disobedience</i> - <i>will be put to shame</i> - <i>Jesus is not precious</i> - <i>they stumble</i> - <i>they were appointed, chosen (see pages 17-20)</i>

§ Rejection of Jesus is fatal and is connected with obeying the mes_ message of God's Word

§ Those who reject Him will one day face Him as their Jud_ Judge (Revelation 20:11-13)

§ Because of sin, all disobedient sinners as destined for a stum_ stumbling, leading to eternal death

§ "Obedience" is not WORKS but bel_ believing God



See Appendix Section for "STONE" and "ROCK" in Scripture

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)



7. Of Kings and Priests, Sojourners and Pilgrims

1 Peter 2:9-12 NKJV

But you are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, His own special people, that you may proclaim the praises of Him who called you out of darkness into His marvelous light; 10 who once were not a people but are now the people of God, who had not obtained mercy but now have obtained mercy. 11 Beloved, I beg you as sojourners and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts which war against the soul, 12 having your conduct honorable among the Gentiles, that when they speak against you as evildoers, they may, by your good works which they observe, glorify God in the day of visitation.

§ *but* – is in con_____ **contrast** _____ to those who are disobedient and therefore stumble (v7-8)

§ chosen – *ekleto* **elect, favored** – note that it is **Sovereign God Who does the choosing**

Isaiah 43:20b-21a (NKJV) ...to give drink to My people, My chosen. 21 This people I have formed for Myself; they shall declare My praise.

Exodus 19:3-6a (NKJV) And Moses went up to God, and the LORD called to him from the mountain, saying, "Thus you shall say to the house of Jacob, and tell the children of Israel: 4'You have seen what I did to the Egyptians, and how I bore you on eagles' wings and brought you to Myself. 5 Now therefore, if you will indeed obey My voice and keep My covenant, then you shall be a special treasure to Me above all people; for all the earth is Mine. 6 And you shall be to Me a kingdom of priests and a holy nation.'

§ God chose Israel to be His sp_____ **special** _____ people for the purpose of _____ **declaring His praise**

§ The special position Israel was to enjoy was cond_____ **conditional** _____ upon their obed_____ **obedience**

§ Peter says in 1 Peter 2:9 that the ch_____ **church** _____ was also chosen for the same purpose (but it has not repl_____ **replaced** _____ Israel – Romans 11 et al) **begin reading Romans 11**

Q1: What is odd or unusual about the term 'royal priesthood' as used in v9? Hint:

Because in Israel, the kings and the priests were kept very separate. Recall that the first King, Saul, got in trouble when he went ahead and performed the sacrifice instead of waiting for the prophet and priest Samuel to arrive to perform it (1 Samuel 13:8-14). The priestly line of Aaron was to be continued through the tribe of Levi, while kings (after Saul) were to come from the tribe of Judah (in accordance with Jacob's blessing – Exodus 48-49)

The Aaronic Priesthood

Role	King	Priest
Tribe	Judah	Levi

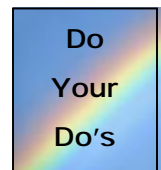
Q2: What does the term mean for you and me?

We have been given a very special place in the household of God, a special purpose that many of God's 'chosen people' of the OT were not permitted to have. There are only three people named in the Bible who share the title "king and priest:" the first one we read about in Scripture is Melchizedek, the second is Jesus Christ (who is also a prophet) and the third is the church...

Q3: What is our purpose, according to verse 9, and how is it an important part of our 'growing up?'

Believer-priests should live so that their heavenly Father's qualities are evident in their lives. We are to serve as witnesses to a dying world of the grace and glory of God, who called us out of darkness into His wonderful light. We are to be to the praise of His name, bringing a sinful world into an understanding of their condition, future and way of salvation.

A key part of growing up is realizing this fully, and allowing this fact to change our heart, lives and behavior.



We got the title through no work of our own. Our job is to live up to it.

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

-----x x x x x x-----

Mini Study 3: Meet King Melchizedek and the Cities of Refuge

Genesis 14:17-20 NKJV

And the king of Sodom went out to meet him at the Valley of Shaveh (that is, the King's Valley), after his return from the defeat of Chedorlaomer and the kings who were with him.



18 Then Melchizedek king of Salem

brought out bread and wine; he was the priest of God Most High. 19 And he blessed him and said: "Blessed be

Abram of God Most High, possessor of heaven and earth; 20 and blessed be God Most High, Who has delivered your enemies into your hand." And he gave him a tithe of all.

Psalms 110:1, 4 NKJV

The LORD said to my Lord, "Sit at My right hand, till I make Your enemies Your footstool." 4 The LORD has sworn and will not relent, "You are a priest forever according to the order of Melchizedek."

Hebrews 5:6-10 NKJV

As He also says in another place: "You are a priest forever according to the order of Melchizedek;" 7 who, in the days of His flesh, when He had offered up prayers and supplications, with vehement cries and tears to Him who was able to save Him from death, and was heard because of His godly fear, 8 though He was a Son, yet He learned obedience by the things which He suffered. 9 And having been perfected, He became the author of eternal salvation to all who obey Him, 10 called by God as High Priest "according to the order of Melchizedek..."

Tucked away in a few verses of Genesis is a very mysterious figure, Melchizedek, King of Salem and Priest of God. If not for the Psalmist David and later the writings of the Apostle Paul, we might never get to know about this important man until we meet him in heaven...

§ "Melchizedek" means K King of R Righteousness

§ He is both k king and p priest

MSQ1: What is so unusual about the blessing?

- § *usually the greater will bless the lesser. Mel. blesses Abram, telling us that he is greater than the acknowledged patriarch of the Jews*
- § *use of bread and wine*

MSQ2: What is unusual about the tithe?

- § *it happened hundreds of years before the Law of Moses was given and the OT system of tithes and offerings was set up...suggesting that tithing is not a Jewish custom that is applied to OT Jews...*

MSQ3: Where have you heard the first part of Psalm 110 quoted? Who is being called Melchizedek's successor? For how long?

- § *Jesus quoted this same passage to the Pharisees when He got tired of them asking questions to trick Him (Matt 22:44, Mk 12:36, Lk 22:42)*
- § *Jesus is identified by God as not Melchizedek's successor, but according to Melchizedek's priestly order...*

MSQ4: What is meant by "in the days of his flesh?"

- § *When Jesus was here on Earth during His 3-year ministry*

MSQ5: Explain verses 7 and 8 and the implications for us.

- § *Jesus pleaded with God for there to be another way, but there was not another way for us to be granted salvation and brought under the protection of Jesus as our High Priest We will study the City of Refuge*
- § *As most sons, he needed to learn obedience – which He already knew and practiced*
- § *Because He allowed Himself to be obedient and therefore was sacrificed for us, He was "perfected" and was then able to be the Author of eternal salvation to all who obey Him.*

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Hebrews 6:20-7:16 NKJV

where the forerunner has entered for us, even Jesus, having become High Priest forever according to the order of Melchizedek .

7:1 For this Melchizedek, king of Salem, priest of the Most High God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings and blessed him, 2 to whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all, first being translated "king of righteousness," and then also king of Salem, meaning "king of peace," 3 without father, without mother, without genealogy, having neither beginning of days nor end of life, but made like the Son of God, remains a priest continually.

4 Now consider how great this man was, to whom even the patriarch Abraham gave a tenth of the spoils. 5 And indeed those who are of the sons of Levi, who receive the priesthood, have a commandment to receive tithes from the people according to the law, that is, from their brethren, though they have come from the loins of Abraham; 6 but he whose genealogy is not derived from them received tithes from Abraham and blessed him who had the promises. 7 Now beyond all contradiction the lesser is blessed by the better. 8 Here mortal men receive tithes, but there he receives them, of whom it is witnessed that he lives. 9 Even Levi, who receives tithes, paid tithes through Abraham, so to speak, 10 for he was still in the loins of his father when Melchizedek met him.

11 Therefore, if perfection were through the Levitical priesthood (for under it the people received the law), what further need was there that another priest should rise according to the order of Melchizedek, and not be called according to the order of Aaron? 12 For the priesthood being changed, of necessity there is also a change of the law. 13 For He of whom these things are spoken belongs to another tribe, from which no man has officiated at the altar.

14 For it is evident that our Lord arose from Judah, of which tribe Moses spoke nothing concerning priesthood. 15 And it is yet far more evident if, in the likeness of Melchizedek, there arises another priest 16 who has come, not according to the law of a fleshly commandment, but according to the power of an endless life.

MSQ6: What additional insight into Jesus and Melchizedek, the high priests, do you gain from 7:1 – 10? Hint: think like a Levite!

§ *Note the focus on Melchizedek's names as a title:*

- *King of righteousness*
- *King of peace*
- *Both titles apply to Jesus Christ!*

§ *Melchizedek had no father and mother noted in the Scriptures to denote his similarity to Jesus Christ as God, without beginning or end of days – Alpha and Omega, First and Last...*

§ *It states that Melchizedek in this sense was made like Jesus Christ...*

- *Implication – the standard is Jesus, therefore to become like Jesus points to Jesus being the forerunner of Melchizedek, even though chronologically Mel. preceded Jesus in our time dimension...but since this was ALL according to God's foreknowledge, Jesus was already destined for an earthly visit before Mel. was sent!*

§ *Historically when Abram gave Mel. titles, Levi was in the loins of Abram, therefore, the Aaronic priesthood is seen as being inferior to Mel's because the lesser gives tithes to the greater, while the greater blesses the lesser...and the tribe of Levi was blessed by God to be its priestly tribe...*

MSQ7: How does Jesus as high priest supplant the Aaronic priesthood, and what does this change bring about?

§ *the Levitical priesthood was not perfect, but flawed because:*

- *the high priest would eventually die and need to be replaced, and*
- *because the high priest was a sinful human who could not permanently cleanse himself*

§ *Because the Levitical priesthood changed to reflect a new order of things, the Law changed!*

§ *The tribe of Judah did not officiate at the altar during the Levitical priesthood*

§ *Jesus humanly is from Judah.*

§ *Moses did not speak anything of Judah becoming the priesthood; suggests that this was part of God's plan that was not revealed to him.*

§ *While Jesus is in the likeness of Mel, he was alive before Mel and will serve as High Priest forever because he cannot die!*

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

So why is being high priest *forever* so important that it gets stated multiple times? One answer is because of the Cities of Refuge...

Numbers 35:9-28 NKJV

Then the LORD spoke to Moses, saying, 10 "Speak to the children of Israel, and say to them: 'When you cross the Jordan into the land of Canaan, 11 then you shall appoint cities to be cities of refuge for you, that the manslayer who kills any person accidentally may flee there. 12 They shall be cities of refuge for you from the avenger, that the manslayer may not die until he stands before the congregation in judgment. 13 And of the cities which you give, you shall have six cities of refuge. 14 You shall appoint three cities on this side of the Jordan, and three cities you shall appoint in the land of Canaan, which will be cities of refuge. 15 These six cities shall be for refuge for the children of Israel, for the stranger, and for the sojourner among them, that anyone who kills a person accidentally may flee there.

16'But if he strikes him with an iron implement, so that he dies, he is a murderer; the murderer shall surely be put to death. 17 And if he strikes him with a stone in the hand, by which one could die, and he does die, he is a murderer; the murderer shall surely be put to death. 18 Or if he strikes him with a wooden hand weapon, by which one could die, and he does die, he is a murderer; the murderer shall surely be put to death. 19 The avenger of blood himself shall put the murderer to death; when he meets him, he shall put him to death. 20 If he pushes him out of hatred or, while lying in wait, hurls something at him so that he dies, 21 or in enmity he strikes him with his hand so that he dies, the one who struck him shall surely be put to death. He is a murderer. The avenger of blood shall put the murderer to death when he meets him.

22'However, if he pushes him suddenly without enmity, or throws anything at him without lying in wait, 23 or uses a stone, by which a man could die, throwing it at him without seeing him, so that he dies, while he was not his enemy or seeking his harm, 24 then the congregation shall judge between the manslayer and the avenger of blood according to these judgments. 25 So the congregation shall deliver the manslayer from the hand of the avenger of blood, and the congregation shall return him to the city of refuge where he had fled, and he shall remain there until the death of the high priest who was anointed with the holy oil. 26 But if the manslayer at any time goes outside the limits of the city of refuge where he fled, 27 and the avenger of blood finds him outside the limits of his city of refuge, and the avenger of blood kills the manslayer, he shall not be guilty of blood, 28 because he should have remained in his city of refuge until the death of the high priest. But after the death of the high priest the manslayer may return to the land of his possession.

MSQ8: Briefly describe how the following deaths caused by another were dealt with:

§ An intentional death (murder)

See additional notes page and read the paragraph or two about this once folks have answered

§ An unintentional death (manslaughter)



1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

MSQ9: What were the conditions under which the Avenger of Blood (a near relative of the dead person) could execute the manslayer (and be found innocent of murder), and when was the manslayer free from the Avenger's pursuit?

First, being declared by the Elders of the city that you were a manslayer meant that as long as you were within the city, you were free from the Avenger of Blood's pursuit. The A of B could call for a congregational trial to find the manslayer guilty, if so, the manslayer would be turned over to the AofB and the AofB could kill the individual without being held as guilty of murder himself. NOTE: NO STATE COSTS! If the manslayer left the city of refuge, then the AofB could kill the manslayer.

The manslayer was free to return to his homeland and family when the High Priest (who was then in power at the time of his application for entry into the city of refuge), died.

Matthew 27:22-25 NKJV

Pilate said to them, "What then shall I do with Jesus who is called Christ?" They all said to him, "Let Him be crucified!" 23 Then the governor said, "Why, what evil has He done?" But they cried out all the more, saying, "Let Him be crucified!" 24 When Pilate saw that he could not prevail at all, but rather that a tumult was rising, he took water and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, "I am innocent of the blood of this just Person. You see to it." 25 And all the people answered and said, "His blood be on us and on our children."



MSQ10: Who put Jesus Christ to death on the cross (who was responsible for killing Him?)

It was not just the people who pleaded with Pilate for His death, but my sins and your sins that held Him there on the cross. Clearly from the people's perspective it was murder because they reasoned it out before they called for His death, according to the passage above...

This is the BAD NEWS

MSQ11: Based on your answer to MSQ10, are you and I currently guilty of murder or manslaughter? Can you prove it Scripturally?

This is the GOOD NEWS. Even when we are guilty, Jesus comes to our rescue and declares us guilty of manslaughter and innocent of murder:

Luke 23:33-34a – the only one of the four gospels to record this event during His crucifixion

And when they had come to the place called Calvary, there they crucified Him, and the criminals, one on the right hand and the other on the left. 34 Then Jesus said, "Father, forgive them, for they do not know what they do."

MSQ12: Tying all of the facts together from this mini-study, why is it so important that Jesus is a high priest forever after the order of Melchizedek?

Because we can flee to Him as our City of Refuge! And He, as High Priest, will never die and therefore will never cease serving as High Priest.

Implication: we have eternal security even from a Jewish perspective!

-----x x x x x-----

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*



Verse 9-10 But you are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, His own special people, that you may proclaim the praises of Him who called you out of darkness into His marvelous light; 10 who once were not a people but are now the people of God, who had not obtained mercy but now have obtained mercy.

Q4: Specifically, when (in God's perspective) were the people not a people, and when did they become a people of God?

The people were "not a people" when they were walking in darkness, in their pagan state and ignorant of God's mercy.

Once the people accepted the gift of salvation, they became God's people.

This should speak to us about how we were made (to be completed by God), why we were made (to proclaim His praises as a result of being set free and becoming a people), and what our response is to be (a royal priesthood offering up sacrifices of praise...)

See additional notes page

mercy

Principle: light should be emitted when I received me_____ instead of justice, as I became indwelt by the Holy Spirit, which is Christ in you, the hope of glory! That light ought to dispel darkness.

Follow the "logic" of the Word of God:

John 8:12 NKJV

Then Jesus spoke to them again, saying, "I am the light of the world. He who follows Me shall not walk in darkness, but have the light of life."

John 9:5 NKJV

As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world."

Colossians 1:27-28 NKJV

To them God willed to make known what are the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles: which is Christ in you, the hope of glory.

Romans 8:9-11 NKJV

But you are not in the flesh but in the Spirit, if indeed the Spirit of God dwells in you. Now if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he is not His. 10 And if Christ is in you, the body is dead because of sin, but the Spirit is life because of righteousness.

Matthew 5:13-16 NKJV

"You are the salt of the earth; but if the salt loses its flavor, how shall it be seasoned? It is then good for nothing but to be thrown out and trampled underfoot by men.

14 "You are the light of the world . A city that is set on a hill cannot be hidden. 15 Nor do they light a lamp and put it under a basket, but on a lampstand, and it gives light to all who are in the house. 16 Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works and glorify your Father in heaven.

Purpose of salt:

- § *To make one thirsty – in this case, thirsty for the Word of God*
- § *To add flavor – when you only live half an existence, it is all bland*
- § *To preserve – by being effective witnesses and allowing the Holy Spirit to use us to draw others to God*

Purpose of light:

- § *To make clear what is hidden so that one may see clearly and make right choices*
- § *To drive away the blinding darkness so that the truth is clearly seen*

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Verse 11: Beloved, I beg you as sojourners and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts which war against the soul,

§ Sojourner - *paroikos* **stranger; those who live in a place that is not their home; a resident alien**

§ Pilgrim - *parepidemos* **to dwell along side as a foreigner, stranger or journeyer**

Q5: Can you truly be a pilgrim if you are not first a stranger to the world?

No...you must first declare yourself as one who is not a citizen of the world, and if necessary, use words to make your declaration when folks observe that you do handle things differently

"Beth, I can't help noticing that there is something different about the way you handle the stress around here."



§ Abstain - *apechesthai* **to hold oneself back from; refrain from; discipline yourself not to do it**

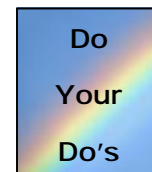
Q6: Specifically, how are folks to know that you are a sojourner and pilgrim, according to the passage?

The things that are the fleshly lusts – see additional notes page for Galatians passage – are not to be in existence in your life – you are restraining yourself from these items...

Fact: Satan's landing strip is found in the fleshly lusts of a person's heart!

Verse 12: having your conduct honorable among the Gentiles, that when they speak against you as evildoers, they may, by your good works which they observe, glorify God in the day of visitation.

§ (Day of) visitation - *episkopee* **inspection (for relief); a visit; the office of a bishop or overseer (the person is an episkopos); therefore by inference, this refers to a time when God visits men for the purpose of providing favorable opportunities to believe (versus visiting for the purpose of judgment) – Luke 19:44 – Jesus declared that he similarly visited the Jews to give them an opportunity to believe, but they refused Him...**



Key points

§ The unsaved world was watching what Christians do, which is a witness witness about God, Who He is and what His character character is like.

§ The 'natural tendency' for a world that is under the power and control of Satan Satan, is to speak evil about Christians (see 'enmity,' Genesis 3:15).

§ Flying in the face of the satanic provocation to speak evil against Christians should be the Christians' good works works and their lifestyle lifestyle, both of which are easily observed.

§ That lifestyle should be in direct contrast to the fleshly fleshly lusts lusts (verse 11) which are practiced by the unbelieving world (Gentiles).

§ When a Christian's lifestyle looks the same as an unbeliever's, God gets slandered slandered.

§ The 'day of visitation' is the time period that His ambassadors (us) are here; that our conduct conduct in front of the critical eyes of a slanderous, unbelieving people, might both glorify glorify God and win others to belief, where they can grow and become disciples disciples.

WE are called by Jesus Himself to "go and make disciples"...Matt 28:19)

When asked what the biggest obstacle to Christianity in India was, Gandhi replied: The Christian...

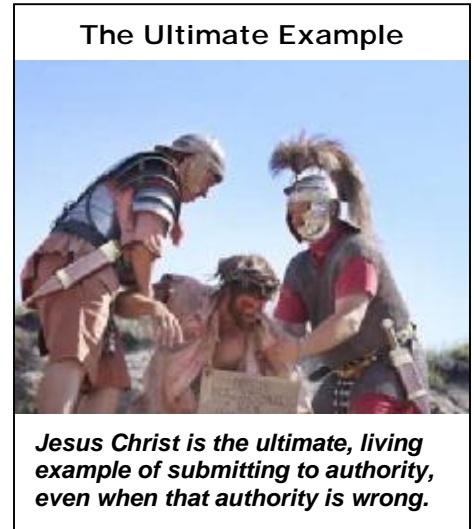
1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

8. Of Citizens and Servants: Submitting to Authority

1 Peter 2:13-25 NKJV

Therefore submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake, whether to the king as supreme, 14 or to governors, as to those who are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers and for the praise of those who do good. 15 For this is the will of God, that by doing good you may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men — 16 as free, yet not using liberty as a cloak for vice, but as bondservants of God. 17 Honor all people. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honor the king.

18 Servants, be submissive to your masters with all fear, not only to the good and gentle, but also to the harsh. 19 For this is commendable, if because of conscience toward God one endures grief, suffering wrongfully. 20 For what credit is it if, when you are beaten for your faults, you take it patiently? But when you do good and suffer, if you take it patiently, this is commendable before God. 21 For to this you were called, because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that you should follow His steps: 22 "Who committed no sin, Nor was deceit found in His mouth"; 23 who, when He was reviled, did not revile in return; when He suffered, He did not threaten, but committed Himself to Him who judges righteously; 24 who Himself bore our sins in His own body on the tree, that we, having died to sins, might live for righteousness — by whose stripes you were healed. 25 For you were like sheep going astray, but have now returned to the Shepherd and Overseer of your souls.



The Ultimate Example

Jesus Christ is the ultimate, living example of submitting to authority, even when that authority is wrong.

With the souls of billions of unbelieving people at stake, each person uniquely made in the image of God, the conduct and lifestyle of a Christian ought to set an example of what God intended. His very own Son set an example of submission for us by voluntarily submitting to authority that was extreme. Now it is our turn to show that same spirit of submission to authority to be an example to the people around us who are closely watching...

§ submit – *hupatasso* **to subordinate, to be under, be subject to, submit self to, to obey**

§ ordinance – *ktisei* **building, creation, creature, ordinance. law**

§ of man – *anthropinos* **after the fashioning of man, made by man, common to man, after the manner of men**

§ Christians are resp_____ **responsible** to obey the law, not for the law's sake but because in so obeying, we bring glory to Jesus Christ.

§ Our motivation is not to avoid the law's puni_ **punishment** but to honor God, who ordained human government.

Q1: Why is obedience so hard?

Because humankind is basically selfish and the natural man desires freedom to do as he pleases, when he pleases, without regard for anyone or anything else. Mankind is rebellious against all authority.

This is what becoming a mature Christian is all about – the discovery that true freedom does not lie in getting what you want when you want it, but in being freed from the bondage of feeling that way!

Q2: What is/are the exception(s) to this directive to obey human laws? Cite an example from Scripture of a believer's refusal to obey human law and where God deemed it OK.

Exception: When a manmade directive countermands a directive from God and the clear teaching of Scripture. Four examples:

§ **Daniel refused to eat all of the delicacies of Nebuchadnezzar's table and instead opted to honor God**

§ **Shadrach, Meshach and Abed-Nego refused to bow to the idol of Nebuchadnezzar**

§ **Daniel refused to stop praying to God**

§ **John and Peter refused to stop telling others about what Jesus Christ had done – preaching the Gospel in Acts 4:19: is it right to obey man rather than God???**

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Verses 15-16: For this is the will of God, that by doing good you may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men — 16 as free, yet not using liberty as a cloak for vice, but as bondservants of God. 17 Honor all people. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honor the king.

§ In this era, Christians were being slandered and falsely accused of evil by “fools.” *Ü define*

§ In contrast to these false witness, Peter instructs his readers to allow their conduct to be a more effective witness (“actions speak louder than words”).

Q5: How might someone use their liberty as a cloak for vice (v16)?

Since they are forgiven and cannot lose their salvation, and the sins that they will commit in the future have already been paid for, one might argue that it is OK to go ahead and sin and enjoy oneself, since it won't affect their entrance into heaven. Two thoughts: 1) it is a terrible witness for God and has consequences with our eternal rewards (we'll have to deal with these for a lot longer than we enjoyed the pleasures of sin); and 2) I don't believe that Christ got a group discount on the punishment He bore for my sin...

§ Sin affects our standing with God but not our sonship.

§ Only a Christian is truly free from the bondage of sin and SSatan.

§ Christian freedom is always balanced by Christian responsibility *ÜÜÜ Jesus' words:*

- o Luke 12:48b NKJV For everyone to whom much is given, from him much will be required; and to whom much has been committed, of him they will ask the more.

A FOUR-POINT SUMMARY OF CHRISTIAN CITIZENSHIP		
<u>Summary Points</u>	<u>Key Words</u>	<u>How We Apply It</u>
Honor all people	<i>timesate</i> - respect, honor, value, prize	§ All human beings are made in God's image § It is not biblical to look for exceptions!
Love the brotherhood	<i>agapao</i> – deep sacrificial love	§ We are to love our brothers and sisters in Christ
Fear God	<i>phobeo</i> – be in awe of, reverence exceedingly	§ One can never truly respect people until he first reverences God
Honor the king	<i>basileous</i> – a sovereign, ruler, king	§ We are to honor all, but especially those whom God has placed into authority

Verse 18: Servants, be submissive to your masters with all fear, not only to the good and gentle, but also to the harsh.

§ servants – *oiketai* *Not doulos (bondservant) but a common household servant, like a laborer. Akin to our term 'employee'*

§ be submissive - *hypotassomenoi* *To submit oneself to, obey, allow yourself to be directed by another*

§ fear – *phobos* *Same word as above – be in awe of, reverence*

§ harsh - *skolios* *Curved, bent, warped, not straight (scoliosis: curvature of spine), "a crooked boss"*



Being a Roman meant a very difficult life, and more so if your master was harsh.

Q6: What does this command look like in our modern times?

While we'd all like to have terrific bosses, sometimes we don't. But we are not to talk back to, disrespect, talk about behind their back, or otherwise demean our boss...regardless of how difficult he or she is to work for!

When we bear up as a cheerful employee under such an employer, we bring glory to God. Likewise, when we complain, whine, passively or actively disobey, we dishonor God.

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Verses 19-21: For this is commendable, if because of conscience toward God one endures grief, suffering wrongfully. 20 For what credit is it if, when you are beaten for your faults, you take it patiently? But when you do good and suffer, if you take it patiently, this is commendable before God. 21 For to this you were called, because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that you should follow His steps...



This man did nothing to cause his painful arthritis...

§ This principle applies to any situation where unjustified suffering occurs.

§ Suffering the natural consequences for your own acts accrues no special credit or praise.

§ "For to this you were called..." = I was called by God for this purpose.

§ Believers are to bear unjust suffering patiently and respectfully, not whining and complaining.
How many times do we whine, moan and complain about all the minor inconveniences?

Q7: Why is it commendable to God to suffer when you have not done anything worth being punished?

Because when we act like the rest of the world and complain me-focusedly, we simply join the me-generation miasma. However, when we don't complain and cheerfully bear up, the rest of the world must look on in amazement. And when we point the glory back to God for allowing us to bear up, He gets the praises. This is what we were "called to do."

Q7: Why is whining and complaining a mark of a baby Christian? What is it rooted in?

When we whine and complain, what we are focusing on is self at the expense of everything else. If we really get honest with ourselves, we have rarely been placed into a situation where we are asked to really suffer. A baby Christian – like a mere baby – has not matured enough to be able to think things through rationally. Recall how a baby cries and gets Mom & Dad there in a flash...reinforcing the idea that the baby is in control. Nothing would be more terrifying than a 250 lb. baby running amok, totally self-centered and totally disobedient!

Whining and complaining are in reality rooted in a lack of trust of God (another sign of immaturity). What we are really saying is that we don't trust the God who allowed us to be in such circumstances, we don't believe that He allows "all things to work together for good to those who love God" and we don't trust that He will bring us through this to build our level of maturity. So by continuing as a self-centered, whiny baby Christian, we force Him to either keep repeating the lesson until we get it, or until He gives up on us!

Q9: But if I don't at least *tell people about my suffering*, how will they pray for me?

Good discussion question...and a bit of a dilemma. There is a fine balance between drawing attention to ones' self and to enlist the help of others in prayer.

Q: Does God know that you have an issue?

God's Word on Dealing With Suffering



Matthew 6:16-18 NKJV

"Moreover, when you fast, do not be like the hypocrites, with a sad countenance. For they disfigure their faces that they may appear to men to be fasting. Assuredly, I say to you, they have their reward. 17 But you, when you fast, anoint your head and wash your face, 18 so that you do not appear to men to be fasting, but to your Father who is in the secret place; and your Father who sees in secret will reward you openly.

James 5:14-15a NKJV

14 Is anyone among you sick? Let him call for the elders of the church, and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord. 15 And the prayer of faith will save the sick, and the Lord will raise him up...

§ Do we bind God's hands when we take matters into our own hands?

§ Do we follow God's plan for the church in taking matters of our sickness to the Elders to pray over?

§ Do we steal God's open reward opportunities by our own self-centeredness?

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*



Verses 21-25: For to this you were called, because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that you should follow His steps: 22 "Who committed no sin, Nor was deceit found in His mouth"; 23 who, when He was reviled, did not revile in return; when He suffered, He did not threaten, but committed Himself to Him who judges righteously; 24 who Himself bore our sins in His own body on the tree, that we, having died to sins, might live for righteousness — by whose stripes you were healed. 25 For you were like sheep going astray, but have now returned to the Shepherd and Overseer of your souls.

Peter quotes from Isaiah 53. Jesus Christ committed no sin, either before or during the six illegal trials following His arrest. Why did He remain silent during His trials, not speaking up in His own defense?

- § Because He placed Himself in our shoes and therefore could not make any defense
- § Because He was the per perfect exa example of patient submission to unjust suffering
- § Because He had fully comm. committed Himself to God, fully trusting God
- § Because He left it to His Father to vind vindicate Him, in His own good time
- § Because while He could have easily ended it, He was obed obedient to the Father
- § Because He is our exa example, from which we learn how to suffer in a godly way
- § Because in His doing so, we (believers) might be free from the pen penalty and power of sin

...by whose stripes you were healed.

- § Stripes – *moilopi*, lash wounds; collectively describing His bro broken body
- § You were healed – p past tense, both His stripes and our healing



There have been several classic interpretations of the meaning of this verse, which Peter quotes from Isaiah 53:5.

1. Because of His broken body, Christians have deliverance from diseases / illnesses (i.e.; healing). *Many Christians use this verse to claim healing from sickness and disease, arguing that Jesus' suffering and broken body made it possible for Christians to have healing and deliverance from all kinds of maladies.*
2. Because of His broken body, Christians have had salvation accomplished, healing the gap between God and themselves. *Numerous scholars support the view that deliverance from the deadliest disease is deliverance from the power of sin to forever kill us, thus it refers to salvation. Note the same verse connects us with being dead to sins. Scholars who support this view: Adam Clarke; Barnes' Notes; Jaimiesson, Faucett & Brown; Chuck Missler, Chuck Smith; David Jeremiah; Matthew Henry*

... for you were like sheep going astray, but have now returned to the Shepherd and Overseer of your souls.

- § The comparison between our p past condition as lost sheep verses our c current condition as having been delivered from sin
- § Returned – epistrepho *to turn about (change direction); turn, convert, revert, go again*
- § Shepherd – poimena *pastor; shepherd* *The dual roles of Jesus Christ are found in today's church, pastor and elder. These terms stress His matchless guidance and management of those who*
- § Overseer - episkopos *bishop, elder; overseer* *commit themselves to His care.*
- § Christ not only provided us with an example of suffering plus the accomplishment of our salvation, but also steps in as Shepherd and Overseer to guide us when we stray

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

9. Marriage Vows



1 Peter 3:1-7 NKJV

Wives, likewise, be submissive to your own husbands, that even if some do not obey the word, they, without a word, may be won by the conduct of their wives, 2 when they observe your chaste conduct accompanied by fear. 3 Do not let your adornment be merely outward — arranging the hair, wearing gold, or putting on fine apparel — 4 rather let it be the hidden person of the heart, with the incorruptible beauty of a gentle and quiet spirit, which is very precious in the sight of God. 5 For in this manner, in former times, the holy women who trusted in God also adorned themselves, being submissive to their own husbands, 6 as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him lord, whose daughters you are if you do good and are not afraid with any terror.

7 Husbands, likewise, dwell with them with understanding, giving honor to the wife, as to the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life, that your prayers may not be hindered.

§ Be submissive - *hupotasso* **obey, come under the supervision of, respect the authority of**

§ Applies to marriages, not to non-married men and women.

§ Applies to wives of both saved and unsaved husbands.
U she may have become saved in a marriage.

§ Does not negate the commandment for believers to marry only believers

2 Corinthians 6:14 NKJV: Do not be unequally yoked together with unbelievers. For what fellowship has righteousness with lawlessness? And what communion has light with darkness? 15 And what accord has Christ with Belial? Or what part has a believer with an unbeliever?)

Q1: In verse 1, how does *likewise* modify the command for wives to be submissive to their husbands?

Likewise refers to the topic of chapter 2, in which Christ was the example for us of being obedient and the topic of Christian behavior was that of being obedient regardless of how nice or nasty the employer, government, etc. was. Believing women are to carry the example of being submissive to the authority of their husbands regardless of their husbands being saved or unsaved, gentle and kind or nasty. A woman is to accept her place in the family as a function of order within the home, under the leadership of a husband whom God placed as the head of the home. It does NOT promote staying in an abusive relationship, where there is clear violation of decency, where her life and children's life are endangered. Coupled with 2 Cor 6:14, it does call for the woman to be very wise in her selection of a mate, choosing character wisely!

Fact: Satan's first (and oldest) point of attack on humanity is the marriage.

Q2: Why is attacking the marriage a key objective for Satan?

Because Christian marriage is the foundation upon which the bulk of society rests. If Satan can attack the marriage by getting mixed (believer + unbeliever) couple to marry, he can increase the likelihood that the marriage will fail. If he can promote strife in the home between believing couple, and divide it, he can mute the testimony of 2 believers and show the rest of the world that Christianity looks no different than pagan marriages.

Q3: What is meant by "chaste conduct accompanied by fear?"

Reverence and purity. The powerful purity of a woman's life can soften even the stoniest male heart.

§ Fine (apparel) – *kosmos* - *adorning or world, world order, "to bring out of chaos" root of cosmetics*

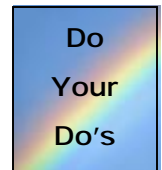


Q4: Is verse 3 a prohibition against dressing well and wearing jewelry and cosmetics?

No- Scripture does not forbid a measure of adornment of a person, but discourages DEPENDENCE upon adornment to make one pleasing and attractive. A person looking like an unmade be repels, and is not a very good witness. One immaculately dressed who has a proud and haughty spirit equally repels. The outward looks of a person is never the source of genuine beauty

§ True beauty is internal, a reflection of the person's incorruptible, godly heart.

§ God greatly values a gentle and quiet spirit in His people.



1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Verses 5-7: For in this manner, in former times, the holy women who trusted in God also adorned themselves, being submissive to their own husbands, 6 as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him lord, whose daughters you are if you do good and are not afraid with any terror.



As a model of submission, Sarah even obeyed her husband in his half-truths and deceptions about her being his sister.

7 Husbands, likewise, dwell with them with understanding, giving honor to the wife, as to the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life, that your prayers may not be hindered

§ This is a comment on the role of hu husbands and wi wives, and not on men and women in general.

§ Note that the foundation of each of these women was to t trust God first, then adorn themselves; both acts in submission to their husband.

Q4: What is meant by the term, "a daughter of Sarah" in verse 6?

On the one hand we have seen that lapse from faith which resulted in the birth of Ishmael, and that lack of self-control and charity which resulted in a quarrel with Abraham, an act of injustice to Hagar, and the disinheriting of Ishmael. Yet on the other hand we see in Sarah, as the New Testament writers point out (Heb 11:11; 1 Peter 3:6), one who through a long life of companionship with Abraham shared his hope in God, his faith in the promises, and his power to become God's agent for achieving what was humanly impossible. In fact, to Sarah is ascribed a sort of spiritual maternity, correlative with Abraham's position as "father of the faithful"; for all women are declared to be the (spiritual) daughters of Sarah, who like her are adorned in "the hidden man of the heart," and who are "doers of good" and "fearers of no terror" (1 Peter loc. cit., literally rendered). That in spite of her outbreak about Hagar and Ishmael she was in general "in subjection to her husband" and of "a meek and quiet spirit," appears from her husband's genuine grief at her decease, and still more clearly from her son's prolonged mourning for her (Gen 24:67; compare 17:17 and 23:1 with 25:20).

§ not afraid with any terror - *Terror – ptoeesin; a fluttering alarm - Act well (IF YOU DO GOOD), and be not thrown into panic, as fearful people are often inclined to be. Septuagint [ptoesin] (Prov 3:25) was probably in Peter's mind: 25 Do not be afraid of sudden terror, Nor of trouble from the wicked when it comes; 26 For the LORD will be your confidence, And will keep your foot from being caught. NKJV. Anger assails men; fear, women. You need fear no man in doing right: not thrown into fluttering agitation by any sudden outbreak of an unbelieving husband's temper, while you do well - Jaimeson, Fauscett & Brown*

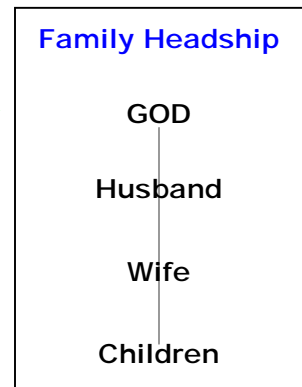
Q5: How does verse 7 continue the same topic of submitting to God? What are the God-honoring rules of headship that the husband is to follow in relating to his wife?

Explain Ū

Husbands are to submit in specific areas, as if they were submitting directly to the Lord:

§ *Living with their wives with "understanding" – (gnoosin) the act of knowing; knowledge – know about her, understand how God has made her, value that unique person, etc. BEFORE you agree to marriage*

§ *Give her honor (time – tee-may) – esteem of the highest order, value as precious – treat her better than you treat anyone or anything else, meaning the time you spend, the quality of time, not upsetting her, etc.*



§ weaker vessel *Weaker – asthenes – having less strength than the husband physically and emotionally. The use of the Greek does not imply inferiority, but grades of strength*

Q6: Why is the husband to understand and honor his wife?

§ *Because she is a joint heir with him of God's grace (salvation and the ensuing relationship with God); fully co-equal in that status, and to do less would be to dishonor God, and*

§ *So that the prayers of the couple would not be hindered. The effectiveness of their prayer life is tied to the degree of tension between the two of them who make up one flesh –*

§ *a flesh divided against itself cannot pray*

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

10. How to Live in a Pagan Culture

1 Peter 3:8-12 NKJV

Finally, all of you be of one mind, having compassion for one another; love as brothers, be tenderhearted, be courteous; 9 not returning evil for evil or reviling for reviling, but on the contrary blessing, knowing that you were called to this, that you may inherit a blessing. 10 For "He who would love life and see good days, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips from speaking deceit.

11 Let him turn away from evil and do good; let him seek peace and pursue it. 12 For the eyes of the LORD are on the righteous, and His ears are open to their prayers; but the face of the LORD is against those who do evil."



As a Christian, you should look different from the pagan culture around you.

§ finally - verse 8 serves as a bridge connecting these two thoughts

Qualities of Submission	
<p>Living as a Christian citizen, employee, and marriage partner 1 Peter 3:1-7</p>	<p>Living in a pagan culture as a Christian, which is living as a sojourner and resident alien 1 Peter 3:8-12</p>
	
"Submitting to the Lord"	

§ of one mind - homophrones - *likemindedness, being in harmony with - 2 root words, homou - together and phrono - understanding - unity in both family and church*

§ having compassion for one another - sympathois *having a fellow feeling, commiserate together, bearing each other's burdens; supporting one another*

§ love as brothers - philadelphoi - *philo - fond of, dear, friendly to & adelphos - a brother, fraternal specifically, to love fellow believers*

§ be tenderhearted - eusplanchnoi - *be inwardly distressed for the welfare of others eu - good, well & splagchnon - tender mercy, inward affection*

§ be courteous - tapeinophrones - *humble, humble-minded*

§ These five Christian virtues serve as terrific witness to those around us, while keeping us free of deceit *"They will know we are Christians by our love, by our love"*

Perhaps the most noticeable way that they will know we are Christians is the way that we deal with revenge...

Q1: What guidance is provided to a Christian for reacting when "someone does us wrong?"

There is no room for vengeance as a Christian. God tells us here and elsewhere that "vengeance is mine" (Romans 12:19, Leviticus 19:18, Proverbs 24:17-18, 29). Jesus taught us to refrain from retaliation (Matthew 5:39). We are instead commanded to seek peace by returning a blessing when receiving an insult. Jesus: 'pray for those who persecute you' (Matt 5:44) and Paul: 'when we are cursed, we bless.' (1 Corinthians 4:12)

Note that this attitude is tied conditionally to receiving a blessing...and this might not be evident in this life, but added to our ERA (Eternal Rewards Account)



Key points In verse 10-12, Peter quotes from Psalm 34:12-16...

§ The Number One unruly member of the body to control is the tongue.

§ Control of it is conditional for both a good and long life.

§ Run away from evil, run after peace.

§ Doing these things = living righteously = having our prayers heard by God.

§ In all these things, God is really asking: "Do you trust Me?" We demonstrate this by not insisting that we get "our fair share" or seeking retaliation.

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

-----x x x x x x-----

Mini Study 4: Dispensational Gaps in Scripture

DISPENSATION

(Gr. oikonomia, "management," "economy"). (1.) The method or scheme according to which God carries out his purposes towards men is called a dispensation. There are usually reckoned three dispensations, the Patriarchal, the Mosaic or Jewish, and the Christian ("Age of Grace"). Each dispensation has particular conditions associated with it, which defines how God carries out His stewardship of humanity. The word is not found with this meaning in Scripture. (from Easton's Bible Dictionary)

A side-by-side comparison of the quotation from Psalm 32 that Peter makes in 1 Peter 3 reveals an interesting part of the Palm 34 passage missing... *Remember, verse numbers, chapters, etc. were added in 13th century and were the device of translators to try to parse the verses...*

<p><u>Psalm 34:12-16 NKJV</u> 12 Who is the man who desires life, and loves many days, that he may see good? 13 Keep your tongue from evil, and your lips from speaking deceit. 14 Depart from evil and do good; seek peace and pursue it. 15 The eyes of the LORD are on the righteous, and His ears are open to their cry. 16 The face of the LORD is against those who do evil, to cut off the remembrance of them from the earth.</p>	<p><u>1 Peter 3:10-12 NKJV</u> 11 "He who would love life and see good days, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips from speaking deceit. 11 Let him turn away from evil and do good; let him seek peace and pursue it. 12 For the eyes of the LORD are on the righteous, and His ears are open to their prayers; but the face of the LORD is against those who do evil." v13 introduces a new topic...</p>
--	---

Q1: Remember that the Church Age was not explicitly known by the writers of the Tenach (Old testament). Paul tells us in Ephesians 3 that the church was a "mystery" that he was now revealing. Peter leaves off the second part of Psalm 34:16. What period of time does Psalm 34:16b refer to, and what period of time is implied as existing between Psalm 34:16a and Psalm 34:16b?

The period of time when God will cut off the remembrance of the people who do evil on planet Earth is when He initiates the Tribulation period as a means of judging mankind over a 7-year period. The eyes of the Lord were on the righteous and ears open to their prayers from the very beginning dispensation – Patriarchal – and continued through the Mosaic and most evident in the Church age. Comparing the two passages, the implied gap points to the Church Age...

Let's look at a similar "gap" in Scripture...

Ü read – HE FOUND THE PLACE – deliberately!

Luke 4:16-22 NKJV

So He [Jesus] came to Nazareth, where He had been brought up. And as His custom was, He went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood up to read. 17 And He was handed the book of the prophet Isaiah. And when He had opened the book, He found the place where it was written:

18 "The Spirit of the LORD is upon Me,
 Because He has anointed Me
 To preach the gospel to the poor;
 He has sent Me to heal the brokenhearted,
 To proclaim liberty to the captives
 And recovery of sight to the blind,
 To set at liberty those who are oppressed;
 19 To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD."

Isaiah 61:1-2 NKJV

1 "The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon Me,
 Because the LORD has anointed Me
 To preach good tidings to the poor;
 He has sent Me to heal the brokenhearted,
 To proclaim liberty to the captives,
 And the opening of the prison to those who are bound;
 2 To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD,
 And the day of vengeance of our God;

20 Then He closed the book, and gave it back to the attendant and sat down. And the eyes of all who were in the synagogue were fixed on Him. 21 And He began to say to them, "Today this Scripture is fulfilled in your hearing."

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)



Q2: What did Jesus add to the Isaiah passage, and what did He omit from it? Why?

§ *Added – recovery of sight to the blind”*

§ *Left off – the day of vengeance of our God*

§ *Why? Because He was not there to initiate God’s vengeance (aka Tribulation) when he visited the first time. I believe that the people of his day were BLIND to God’s truth, so he came to illuminate the Scriptures so that people could understand the times (Recall how He chastised the Pharisees for not knowing the signs of the times –*

Matthew 16:1-3 – and how after His resurrection, He illuminated the Scriptures to the disciples on the Emmaus road – Luke 24:32?

Q3: Compare Peter’s ‘gap’ with that of Jesus. Are they implying the same thing?

Yes – they both cover the mysterious time of the church age

A careful study of Scripture reveals 24 such ‘dispensational gaps’, all of which are associated with the church age! This clearly points to an evidence of design by the Author, the Holy Spirit.

Dispensational Gaps in Scripture That Include the Church Age

(a study by Chuck Missler based on the work of G.H. Pember)

	Book	Verse(s) where the gap is implied
1	Psalm 34	10-12
2	Psalm 118	middle of verse 22
3	Isaiah 9	6, after first clause
4	Isaiah 53	middle of verse 10
5	Isaiah 61	middle of verse 2
6	Lamentations 4	Between verses 21 and 22
7	Daniel 9	Between verses 26 and 27
8	Daniel 11	Between verses 20 and 21
9	Hosea 2	Between verses 13 and 14
10	Hosea 3	Between verses 4 and 5
11	Amos 9	Between verses 10 and 11
12	Micah 5	Between verses 2 and 3
13	Habakkuk 2	Between verses 13 and 14
14	Zephaniah 3	Between verses 7 and 8
15	Zechariah 9	Between verses 9 and 10
16	Matthew 10	Middle of verse 23
17	Matthew 12	Middle of verse 20
18	Luke 1	Between verses 31 and 32
19	Luke 4	18-20, quoting Isaiah 61:1-2
20	Luke 21	Middle of verse 11
21	I John 1	Between verses 5 and 6
22	I Peter 1	Middle of verse 11
23	I Peter 3	10-12, quoting Psalm 34:12-16
24	Revelation 12	Between verses 5 and 6

One other interesting and provocative note: the number 24 is used in Scripture associated with the 24 Elders of Revelation, who are identified there as representatives of the Church Age. Could it be that numerically, “24” is associated with the church?

-----x x x x x x-----

continuing: [How to Live in a Pagan Culture...](#)

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

1 Peter 3:13-17 NKJV

And who is he who will harm you if you become followers of what is good? 14 But even if you should suffer for righteousness' sake, you are blessed. "And do not be afraid of their threats, nor be troubled." 15 But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts, and always be ready to give a defense to everyone who asks you a reason for the hope that is in you, with meekness and fear; 16 having a good conscience, that when they defame you as evildoers, those who revile your good conduct in Christ may be ashamed. 17 For it is better, if it is the will of God, to suffer for doing good than for doing evil.

Q4: How many of the difficulties that happen to you are not "Father-filtered?" Support your answer Scripturally.

Nothing happens to a Christian that is not first permitted by God.

***Scriptural support: Job 1 & 2 point out that Satan must receive permission from God to touch someone's life
Romans 8: 28 And we know that all things work together for good to those who love God, to those who are called according to His purpose.***

God will not harm us – according to His own Word, this includes sicknesses, finances, persecutions, etc.

Q5: So why do these difficulties of life – and even bad things - happen to good Christians?

- 1. for our learning and growth, learning more and more to TRUST GOD – everyday He finds a new way to ask "Do you trust Me?"***
- 2. so that we are properly equipped to help those who are going through the same trials – especially unbelievers (see verse 15) using what God has helped us to learn.***

2 Corinthians 1:3-5 NKJV Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies and God of all comfort, 4 who comforts us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort those who are in any trouble, with the comfort with which we ourselves are comforted by God. 5 For as the sufferings of Christ abound in us, so our consolation also abounds through Christ.

Q6: What does 'suffering for righteousness' sake' mean (verse 14)?

Suffer – pascho – means to feel for, vex, to experience a sensation which is usually painful.

It appears to mean: the relatively minor but unpleasant things we experience because we hold fast to the truth of God's Word and live out our faith in evidence to the pagan world around us.

David was an expert on suffering for righteousness' sake. We can learn much from his perspective in the midst of his trials...

Psalm 27 NKJV (A Psalm of David)

The LORD is my light and my salvation; whom shall I fear? The LORD is the strength of my life; of whom shall I be afraid? 2 When the wicked came against me to eat up my flesh, my enemies and foes, they stumbled and fell. 3 Though an army may encamp against me, my heart shall not fear; though war may rise against me, in this I will be confident.

4 One thing I have desired of the LORD, that will I seek: that I may dwell in the house of the LORD all the days of my life, to behold the beauty of the LORD, and to inquire in His temple. 5 For in the time of trouble He shall hide me in His pavilion; in the secret place of His tabernacle He shall hide me; He shall set me high upon a rock.

6 And now my head shall be lifted up above my enemies all around me; therefore I will offer sacrifices of joy in His tabernacle; I will sing, yes, I will sing praises to the LORD.

7 Hear, O LORD, when I cry with my voice! have mercy also upon me, and answer me. 8 When You said, "Seek My face," My heart said to You, "Your face, LORD, I will seek." 9 Do not hide Your face from me; do not turn Your servant away in anger; You have been my help; do not leave me nor forsake me, O God of my salvation. 10 When my father and my mother forsake me, then the LORD will take care of me.

11 Teach me Your way, O LORD, and lead me in a smooth path, because of my enemies. 12 Do not deliver me to the will of my adversaries; for false witnesses have risen against me, and such as breathe out violence. 13 I would have lost heart, unless I had believed That I would see the goodness of the LORD in the land of the living.

14 Wait on the LORD; be of good courage, and He shall strengthen your heart; wait, I say, on the LORD!



Have you prepared yourself to be ready to share the gospel with those who ask you why you have hope (verse 15)?

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Verse 15: But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts, and always be ready to give a defense to everyone who asks you a reason for the hope that is in you, with meekness and fear... *This is a common memory verse yet it contains some very specific instructions, implicit and explicit that may be often overlooked*

§ sanctify the Lord God in your hearts - *Sanctify = set apart, separate it out from among*

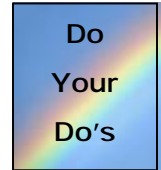
In context, separate your heart from the pagan culture and separate it to Him

- o this is our most important stew stewardship as Christians
- o it must be pre-emptive and found foundational to the command that follows it

§ and *links two commands and makes them conditioned upon one another*

§ always be ready - *In a live war, one must always be in a state of preparedness*

- o implies that the individual has thoroughly prep preparation before this event
- o you cannot present God's Word by shooting from the hip *Ü diligent study of the Word this is the mark of a mature believer*
- o 2 Timothy 2:15 NKJV: Be diligent to present yourself approved to God, a worker who does not need to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.



§ to give a defense - *this is a mandate for Apologetics, a branch of theology that is concerned with proving the truth of Christianity, and requires homework so that you can give a good answer*

- o it does not mean trying to argue someone into the kingdom, but instead *seeking guidance from the Holy Spirit to give you the right words, calmly presented, and to allow Him to go to work in that person's heart*

§ to everyone who asks you a reason for the hope that is in you - *this means that 1) your life must reflect the evidence that you are a Christian and have hope in a hopeless world and 2) you look for an invitation and do not take the approach that you will start hammering away with someone you don't know*

§ with meekness and fear - *not arrogance, condemnation of them, heavy handedness, using big words, showing off... BUT INSTEAD being very gently, understanding, living, and reverent towards God who alone equips them to believe...*

Verses 16-17: having a good conscience, that when they defame you as evildoers, those who revile your good conduct in Christ may be ashamed. 17 For it is better, if it is the will of God, to suffer for doing good than for doing evil.

§ The best defense - and wit witnesses - against slander is to be inno innocent. When you are, you have a clear cons conscience and know that God deems you worthy of suffering unjustly.

§ One outcome of unjust suffering is justi justified hurt. Paul warns us to be on guard and not allow a justified hurt to develop into a root of bitterness:

Hebrews 12:14-15 NKJV Pursue peace with all people, and holiness, without which no one will see the Lord: 15 looking carefully lest anyone fall short of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up cause trouble, and by this many become defiled...

- o a bitter root cannot develop unless it is nurt nurtured by me
- o Christ served as the ultimate exa example of letting it go
- o Proverbs 19:1 NIV A man's wisdom gives him patience; it is to his glory to overlook an offense.



§ Strategies to overlook an offense:

- o Grow up! Stop whining! It is NOT all about you.
- o Take it to the cr cross and give it up
- o Talk to the "offe offender" and seek forgiveness
- o Keep an eternal persp perspective

allowing a root of bitterness to grow has a result: you take an asset from your "glory" account and deduct it, and then add a liability to your "Lack of Rewards" account

Immature believers see a hurt around every corner while mature believers just don't seem to notice them.

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

11. Preaching to the Spirits

1 Peter 3:18-20 NKJV

For Christ also suffered once for sins, the just for the unjust, that He might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh but made alive by the Spirit, 19 by whom also He went and preached to the spirits in prison, 20 who formerly were disobedient, when once the Divine longsuffering waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was being prepared, in which a few, that is, eight souls, were saved through water.

Disturbing question of the week: When Jesus was illegally tried six times on the night of His arrest, why did He not open His mouth in His own defense? Because He was in our shoes, with our sin on Him, and could not say anything at all in His defense, because by taking on our sins, he had no defense...

§ suffered once for sins – *Christ suffered for all sins at once; that is, all the sin that would ever be committed throughout all time would be paid for at one time. How many of your sins were yet future when He was crucified? ALL OF THEM! He was the just, put to death once for the unjust. He is the ultimate example of overlooking a hurt and giving up His life for us...do we live lives that are worthy of His sacrifice?*

Romans 5:6-11 NKJV

For when we were still without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly. 7 For scarcely for a righteous man will one die; yet perhaps for a good man someone would even dare to die. 8 But God demonstrates His own love toward us, in that while we were still sinners, Christ died for us. 9 Much more then, having now been justified by His blood, we shall be saved from wrath through Him. 10 For if when we were enemies we were reconciled to God through the death of His Son, much more, having been reconciled, we shall be saved by His life. 11 And not only that, but we also rejoice in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have now received the reconciliation.

Disturbing question of the week Number 2: Did Jesus Christ get a group discount for all sin, or did he pay for each one individually? If He paid for each one individually, what does that say about the sins I have yet to commit? Provocative question – could the sins that I have yet to commit – and could thereby stop – somehow add to His punishment?

§ After Jesus had died and was buried, his body was made alive by The Holy Spirit

§ In His spirit Jesus, while in Hades, went and “pr preached to the spirits in prison.”

§ Preached – *kerusso: proclaim, make known, declare (it does not necessarily imply repentance, and would simply be a declaration of victory)*

§ Many views on the meaning of this verse:

Who / When	Interpretation	Challenge
Clement of Alexandria 200 A.D.	Christ was sent to Hades in His spirit to proclaim the message of salvation to the souls of dead sinners imprisoned there since the Flood	<i>salvation is not possible once you are dead – appointed once to man to die, and then the judgment - Heb 9:27</i>
Augustine 400 A.D.	The pre-existent Christ proclaimed salvation through Noah to the people who lived prior to the Flood, who later would perish because they were evil	<i>this view fits the theme of this section – keeping a good conscience in unjust persecution – Noah endured harsh criticism for 120 years...</i>
Friedrich Spitta c1890	Christ, while in Hades, proclaimed His victory over sin to the fallen angels imprisoned in Tartarus, the lowest region of Hades	<i>this view also fits with additional Scriptures we will study in more detail later on – and resolves a number of additional questions...</i>

Col 2:15 Having disarmed principalities and powers, He made a public spectacle of them, triumphing over them in it.

§ In the “days of Noah” – appears 4 times: Genesis 9:29, Matthew 24:27; Luke 17:26, and here

§ Noah, according to 2 Peter 2:5, was a pre preacher of rig righteousness
he was a 4th generation (after Enoch) preacher of the coming judgment (Jude 14-15)

§ The longsuffering of God (“the Divine”) waited 120 years for Noah to complete the ark



*Ü cover Enoch – Methuselah – Lamech – Noah Methuselah died just prior to the Flood...
See Appendix Section for Timeline for “The Days of Noah”*



1 Peter 3:18 is one of the shortest and simplest, yet richest, summaries of the meaning of the cross in the New Testament.

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Genesis 6:3, 5-8 NKJV

And the LORD said, "My Spirit shall not strive with man forever, for he is indeed flesh; yet his days shall be one hundred and twenty years." 5 Then the LORD saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every intent of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. 6 And the LORD was sorry that He had made man on the earth, and He was grieved in His heart. 7 So the LORD said, "I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth, both man and beast, creeping thing and birds of the air, for I am sorry that I have made them." 8 But Noah found grace in the eyes of the LORD.

Q1: Why did God, Who is longsuffering, wait for 120 years to send the Flood?

2 Peter 3:9 The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some count slackness, but is longsuffering toward us, not willing that any should perish but that all should come to repentance.

God is certainly longsuffering towards us today!

§ God as longsuffering: Exodus 34:6; Numbers 14:18; Romans 2:4; Romans 9:32, I Timothy 1:16; I Peter 3:20; II Peter 3:9 and 15

§ Enoch prophesied judgment as a product of Jesus' Second Coming (Jude 14-15)

§ Methuselah's name is prophetic of His death would bring the judgment upon the whole earth

§ Three classes of people facing the Flood of Noah: **This is a model of the Rapture and Tribulation!**

- Those who per perished in the Flood
- Those who were pres preserved through the Flood (8 of them)
- Those who were rem removed before the Flood (Enoch) **one body Ú the church is 'one body'**

§ Something happened to Enoch when he was 65 years old: **I believe God shared His plan with Enoch**
Genesis 5:21-24 NKJV Enoch lived sixty-five years, and begot Methuselah. 22 After he begot Methuselah, Enoch walked with God three hundred years, and had sons and daughters. 23 So all the days of Enoch were three hundred and sixty-five years. 24 And Enoch walked with God; and he was not, for God took him.

God's longsuffering i.e.; MERCY

- The 969 year lifespan of Methuselah is a type of _____
- "walked with God 300 years" – **Started walking at 65 when Methuselah was born; one of two in Scripture of who it is said walked with God (Noah – Gen 6:9)**
§ Amos 3:3 NKJV: Can two walk together, unless they are agreed? **Clearly indicates the life change in Enoch**
- walking implies prog progress as well as a per personal relationship **understanding**
§ not a one-time event, but a day-by-day dialog resulting in deeper and deeper under _____
- Enoch's walk also lived out, for 300 years, a belief that God would ra rapture him:
§ Hebrews 11:5 NKJV By faith Enoch was taken away so that he did not see death, "and was not found, because God had taken him"; for before he was taken he had this testimony, that he pleased God.
§ God did not take him by sur surprise – Enoch expected it!
- After Methuselah was born, Enoch had other sons and daughters – lived in the world, walked with God
- Enoch did not withdraw from life, but he "occ occupied " the same way Christ commands us to:
§ Luke 19:13b NKJV and said to them, 'Do business till I come.'

Jesus was explaining His expectation that once He was gone, He expected His disciples to live in expectation of His return, and as such, walk with God while living in an evil world...

Disturbing question of the week Number 3: With so clear an example of Enoch and his 300-year walk with God during a time more evil than ours, the question each of us must ask ourselves is: What will I choose to do? Walk with God or with the world? Will my testimony be that I pleased God, or displeased Him?



1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

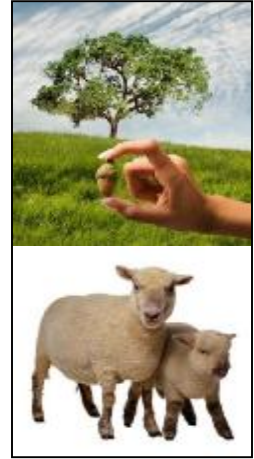
-----x x x x x x-----

Mini Study 5: The Nephilim Conspiracy (The Truth Behind the Flood of Noah)

In the beginning, God established a very specific principle regarding how all life on the earth would reproduce...

Genesis 1:11-12: 20-25 (NKJV)

Then God said, "Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb that yields seed, and the fruit tree that yields fruit according to its kind, whose seed is in itself, on the earth"; and it was so. 12 And the earth brought forth grass, the herb that yields seed according to its kind, and the tree that yields fruit, whose seed is in itself according to its kind. And God saw that it was good. 20 Then God said, "Let the waters abound with an abundance of living creatures, and let birds fly above the earth across the face of the firmament of the heavens." 21 So God created great sea creatures and every living thing that moves, with which the waters abounded, according to their kind, and every winged bird according to its kind. And God saw that it was good. 22 And God blessed them, saying, "Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let birds multiply on the earth." 23 So the evening and the morning were the fifth day. 24 Then God said, "Let the earth bring forth the living creature according to its kind: cattle and creeping thing and beast of the earth, each according to its kind"; and it was so. 25 And God made the beast of the earth according to its kind, cattle according to its kind, and everything that creeps on the earth according to its kind. And God saw that it was good.



MSQ1: State the principle of reproduction, in 12 words or less. Circle or highlight your basis for this principle in the passage above.

That all life would reproduce itself AFTER ITS OWN KIND

Jude 1:6 (NIV and NKJ)

- And the angels who did not keep their positions of authority but abandoned their own home-- these he has kept in darkness, bound with everlasting chains for judgment on the great Day.
- And the angels who did not keep their proper domain, but left their own abode, He has reserved in everlasting chains under darkness for the judgment of the great day;

MSQ2: In Jude 6, we find an example of corporate punishment (punishment for a whole group) for apostasy. Who specifically is being punished? What did they do to deserve punishment?

The group being punished are angels who sinned, who left heaven (their proper home) and did not keep their proper place in God's order of things.

2 Peter 2:4 (NIV) 'For if God did not spare angels when they sinned, but sent them to hell, putting them into gloomy dungeons to be held for judgment;'

§ The word that is translated "hell" in the NIV is *Tartarus*, which was well known in the ancient world to mean the lowest chamber of Hades hell, sort of a subset of the 'place of torments.'

§ See Luke 16:19-31 for Jesus' exposition on Hades hell

Three views of Jude 6:

1. We aren't sup supposed to know any more about the verse than it says.
2. The angels who sinned are those who reb rebelled with Satan (Isaiah 14:12-17) and were swept to earth (Revelation 12:1-9). Problem: neither Satan nor these angels are bound, and Jude 6 says these angels are bound.
3. These are the angels who participated in the Nep Nephilim Cons Conspiracy.

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Genesis 3:14-15 (NKJV)

So the LORD God said to the serpent: "Because you have done this, you are cursed more than all cattle, and more than every beast of the field; on your belly you shall go, and you shall eat dust all the days of your life. 15 And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your seed and her Seed; he shall bruise your head, and you shall bruise His heel."

§ Note that there are 2 seeds mentioned: the seed of the woman; the seed of Satan

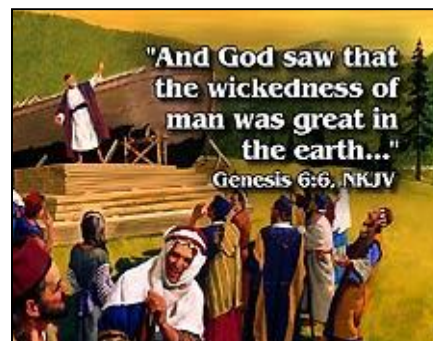
MSQ3: According to the Genesis passage above, what was God's announced plan to redeem Adam and his race of humans? What conditions did God establish for that redemption to take place?

God would use a human offspring to produce the Messiah, who would crush Satan at the proper time. This required that the offspring ("seed") would be a human being.

God announced His plan to redeem mankind in Genesis 3:15. So Satan countered with a plan of his own...requiring God to have a counter-counter plan...

Genesis 6:1-14 (NKJV)

Now it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born to them, 2 that the sons of God saw the daughters of men, that they were beautiful; and they took wives for themselves of all whom they chose. 3 And the LORD said, "My Spirit shall not strive with man forever, for he is indeed flesh; yet his days shall be one hundred and twenty years." 4 There were giants on the earth in those days, and also afterward, when the sons of God came in to the daughters of men and they bore children to them. Those were the mighty men who were of old, men of renown. 5 Then the LORD saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every intent of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. 6 And the LORD was sorry that He had made man on the earth, and He was grieved in His heart. 7 So the LORD said, "I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth, both man and beast, creeping thing and birds of the air, for I am sorry that I have made them." 8 But Noah found grace in the eyes of the LORD. 9 This is the genealogy of Noah. Noah was a just man, perfect in his generations. Noah walked with God. 10 And Noah begot three sons: Shem, Ham, and Japheth. 11 The earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with violence. 12 So God looked upon the earth, and indeed it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted their way on the earth. 13 And God said to Noah, "The end of all flesh has come before Me, for the earth is filled with violence through them; and behold, I will destroy them with the earth. **SEE ADDITIONAL NOTES PAGE**



§ v2: 'sons of God' (6:2) – *b'nai Elohim* *The term is rendered 'angels of God' 3 of 4 times that it appears in the Old Testament (Job 1:6, 2:11, 38:7) – refers to a direct creation by God*

§ daughters of men – *female children of 'Adam'*

§ took (*wayiqchaw*) wives for themselves of all whom they chose *to take; implies in context by force or seduction and rape*

§ v3: this act angered God so that He set a countdown to judgment of 120 years *the Flood*

§ v4: giants – Latin (*gigantos*), Hebrew (*ha-Naphiliym*, root word *naphal*) – *They were the unnatural offspring of the union of the b'nai Elohim and human women, whom they took to breed with. The word comes from 'naphal' which means to fall (Fallen ones) as in falling to earth from heaven Gigantes = "earth born" or giant*

§ mighty men – *hagiboriym* *These are not human men! Man = ish; they were mutants that resembled humans*

§ men of renown – *'anshey hasheem* *(mighty, champion, excelling) men of infamy*

MSQ4: What specifically did this group of b'nai Elohim do that would thwart God's plan as outlined in Genesis 3:15?

They corrupted the bloodline of the human race. Thus the seed of the woman would have been snuffed out if unchecked by God as the Nephilim became the superior species.

MSQ5: What was the influence of the Nephilim on humankind?

As their bloodline mingled with men over the generations, this new mutated man-like society became thoroughly evil – every intent of the heart, all the time – nothing good in them...and therefore not capable of salvation

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

MSQ6: Given the condition of the population of the planet, what was God's counter-measure?

He needed to wipe out the inhabitants of the planet, since they were NOT HUMAN and were inherently beyond the ability to be saved. SCARY THOUGHT: This co-mingling may have also extended to the animals...

Genesis 6:9 (NKJV)

This is the genealogy of Noah. Noah was a just man, perfect in his generations. Noah walked with God.

MSQ7: What was unique about Noah, according to Genesis 6:9?

§ He was j just, meaning: *justified, righteous (made right with God) because of his belief in God's plan*

§ He was pe perfect in his generations, meaning: *meaning that his bloodline was pure from Nephilim corruption*

§ He w walked with God, meaning:
He voluntarily followed God, progressing in his personal relationship with Him, trusting God to do what He said, daily fellowship

Genesis 6:13-14 NKJV

And God said to Noah, "The end of all flesh has come before Me, for the earth is filled with violence through them; and behold, I will destroy them with the earth. 14 Make yourself an ark of gopherwood; make rooms in the ark, and cover it inside and outside with pitch.

§ the end of – qets: *Progressed to the extremity, uttermost, border, end*

§ will destroy them – mashchityaam: *utterly destroy, spoil waste*

§ the earth – haa'aarets: *the ground, the earth's surface (why we don't know what the earth was like!)*

§ cover it ...with pitch: kaphar ba kopher *kaphar >>>> atonement! cover with a bituminous pitch*



Thus God preserved a pure remnant of both the human race and the animal kingdom through the destruction of the Flood by having Noah build an ark sealed with pitch inside and out...

Genesis 6:4 (NKJV)

There were giants on the earth in those days, and also afterward, when the sons of God came in to the daughters of men and they bore children to them. Those were the mighty men who were of old, men of renown.

§ giants – gigantes – from the Septuagint version (Hebrew translation of Tanakh to Greek)

- o better English rendering – e earth b born; is there a tie-in to the "earth dwellers" of Rev?
- o they may have also been gi gigantic and likely seemed to be supermen

MSQ8: In the passage above, what are the most disturbing words?

No...the disturbing words "and also afterwards" suggests that after God dealt with all the Nephilim alive at the Flood, then Satan induced more after the Flood...specifically when is not identified in this passage...

Did You Know?



Most ancient cultures have their own legends about the 'gods who came from heaven,' intermarried with humans, and produced super human offspring. These legends are found in the writings of ancient Greece, India, Egypt, Sioux Indians, Persia, Sumeria, Bolivia, among the Mayans, Incas, Sumerians and inhabitants of the South-Sea Islands. For example, the Greek Titans rebelled against their father Uranus and were defeated by Zeus and confined to Tartarus. Isn't it interesting that the Bible contains the true answers to things like mythology?

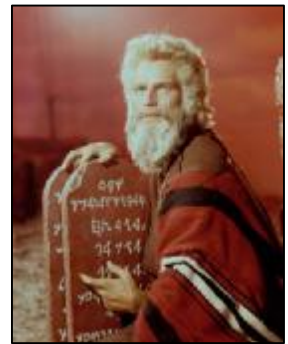
1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

The Flood did not put an end to the Nephilim. Some post-flood Nephilim include:

- § Goliath and his four brothers from Gath (1 Samuel 17:4-13, 2 Samuel 21:15-22)
- § the sons of Anak (Anakim or Anakites) (Numbers 13:33, Joshua 15:13-14, Judges 1:20)
- § the Rephaites (translated giants in KJV: Deuteronomy 2:11, 20-21; Joshua 12:4, 13:12, 15:8, 17:15)
- § Og, king of Bashun (13 feet tall?) (Deuteronomy 3:11)
- § the Amorites (Amos 2:9)
- § possibly even Nimrod, ruler of Babel, who was a 'mighty hunter' in defiance of God (Genesis 10:8-10)

Have you ever been disturbed at God's instructions to Joshua to wipe out entire people groups during the time the Jews entered the Promised Land?

Moses, when speaking to the Jews about entering the Promised Land, cautioned them about the inhabitants in the land who trafficked in the spirit world. These were the same peoples from whom some of the post-flood Nephilim had come. God did not want His people intermarrying with these races, nor becoming susceptible to demonic influence.



Deuteronomy 18:9-12 (NIV)

When you enter the land the LORD your God is giving you, do not learn to imitate the detestable ways of the nations there. 10 Let no one be found among you who sacrifices his son or daughter in the fire, who practices divination or sorcery, interprets omens, engages in witchcraft, 11 or casts spells, or who is a medium or spiritist or who consults the dead. 12 Anyone who does these things is detestable to the LORD, and because of these detestable practices the LORD your God will drive out those nations before you.

Deuteronomy 7:1-4 (NIV)

When the LORD your God brings you into the land you are entering to possess and drives out before you many nations-- the Hittites, Girgashites, Amorites, Canaanites, Perizzites, Hivites and Jebusites, seven nations larger and stronger than you-- 2 and when the LORD your God has delivered them over to you and you have defeated them, then you must destroy them totally. Make no treaty with them, and show them no mercy. 3 Do not intermarry with them. Do not give your daughters to their sons or take their daughters for your sons, 4 for they will turn your sons away from following me to serve other gods, and the LORD's anger will burn against you and will quickly destroy you.

MSQ9: Were the Jews under Joshua successful in ridding the land of all of the Nephilim? Recall, for example, that Caleb asked Joshua to be given Hebron as his inheritance, from whence he drove out three sons of Anak (the Anakim) (Joshua 15:14, Judges 1:20). Support your answer.

No...while they obeyed God and slaughtered many of the nations that they had been instructed to eradicate, they also left some people groups in the land. Examples:

- § ***Goliath and his four brothers - that is why David took up five stones, not because he was afraid he would miss or needed to nail Goliath more than once – see Joshua 11:22, 1 Samuel 17:14, 2 Samuel 21:15-22, 1 Chronicles 20.***
- § ***The Jebusites, who lived in the area of Jerusalem (the name Jerusalem was taken from its inhabitants after Melchizedek, the Jebusites, who had changed the name from Salem (under Melchizedek) to Jebu-Salem under the Jebusites) – the Jews lived with them in the area of their most holy city...leading to who knows what...***

MSQ10: Scripture records that the Anakim, Rephaites, etc. were eventually killed off about the time of David. Does this mean that the Nephilim conspiracy has finally ended?

Well, we do not know what tricks Satan has up his sleeve. While Scripture is clear about the occultic connection to then-present day Nephilim, there is a passage of Scripture that is a bit provocative for what it may be implying...

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

The Church of the Latter Day Nephilim? A Theory...

1 Peter 3:18-20 (NIV)

For Christ died for sins once for all, the righteous for the unrighteous, to bring you to God. He was put to death in the body but made alive by the Spirit, 19 through whom also he went and preached to the spirits in prison 20 who disobeyed long ago when God waited patiently in the days of Noah while the ark was being built. In it only a few people, eight in all, were saved through water,

Matthew 24:36-37 (NIV)

[Jesus speaking] "No one knows about that day or hour, not even the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but only the Father. 37 As it was in the days of Noah, so it will be at the coming of the Son of Man.

1 Timothy 4:1 (NIV)

The Spirit clearly says that in later times some will abandon the faith and follow deceiving spirits and things taught by demons.

Daniel 2:39-45 (NKJV) when interpreting Nebuchadnezzar's dream about the global kingdoms that would follow his But after you shall arise another kingdom inferior to yours; then another, a third kingdom of bronze, which shall rule over all the earth. 40 And the fourth kingdom shall be as strong as iron, inasmuch as iron breaks in pieces and shatters everything; and like iron that crushes, that kingdom will break in pieces and crush all the others. 41 Whereas you saw the feet and toes, partly of potter's clay and partly of iron, the kingdom shall be divided; yet the strength of the iron shall be in it, just as you saw the iron mixed with ceramic clay. 42 And as the toes of the feet were partly of iron and partly of clay, so the kingdom shall be partly strong and partly fragile. 43 As you saw iron mixed with ceramic clay, they will mingle with the seed of men; but they will not adhere to one another, just as iron does not mix with clay. 44 And in the days of these kings the God of heaven will set up a kingdom which shall never be destroyed; and the kingdom shall not be left to other people; it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand forever.



if "they mingle with the seed of men" then they aren't men!

MSQ11: What aspects of current culture would support the theory that the world is currently being conditioned to accept the Nephilim that are still to come?

Current culture certainly supports the fascination people have with the "immortals," (TV show Highlander), aliens (X-files, Taken, et. al), super heroes (X Men, League of Extraordinary Gentlemen, Hellboy)...could we be in the midst of being conditioned by the god of this world to accept things like the Nephilim...which is what the people in Noah's time accepted. Cloning, gene therapy, all sorts of twisted things open the possibility that there will be Nephilim in the land, perhaps performing Satanic signs, miracles and lying wonders, in the end-times...

MSQ12: What are some key lessons for us to keep in mind from this mini study of the Nephilim?

1. *Satan will stop at nothing to advance his schemes against God's plan*
2. *His schemes may even appear to be good (creating a more perfect race????) and suck people in*
3. *The Nephilim CANNOT be saved, any more than angels can be saved.*
4. *It appears that people must willingly allow him to work his schemes (in the Garden, he tempted, and did not force - - somehow he needs people to willingly give in)*
5. *The spirit world is alive and real and incredibly malevolent*
6. *The God who preserved the race through the insidious plot of the Nephilim is in control and will preserve those who seek Him and cleave to Him*
7. *Trafficking in the spirit world leads to apostasy*

Ephesians 6:10-18a NKJV

Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord and the power of His might 11 Put on the whole armor of God, that you may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. 12 For we do not wrestle against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this age, against spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places. 13 Therefore take up the whole armor of God, that you may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand.

14 Stand therefore, having girded your waist with truth, having put on the breastplate of righteousness, 15 and having shod your feet with the preparation of the gospel of peace; 16 above all, taking the shield of faith with which you will be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked one. 17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God; 18 praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, being watchful to this end with all perseverance



§ **God** _____ is/are responsible for the full armor

§ **We** _____ is/are responsible for putting the full armor on

-----x x x x x x-----

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

12. A New Life in Christ

1 Peter 3:21-4:6 NKJV

There is also an antitype which now saves us — baptism (not the removal of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God), through the resurrection of Jesus Christ, 22 who has gone into heaven and is at the right hand of God, angels and authorities and powers having been made subject to Him.

4:1 Therefore, since Christ suffered for us in the flesh, arm yourselves also with the same mind, for he who has suffered in the flesh has ceased from sin, 2 that he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh for the lusts of men, but for the will of God. 3 For we have spent enough of our past lifetime in doing the will of the Gentiles — when we walked in lewdness, lusts, drunkenness, revelries, drinking parties, and abominable idolatries. 4 In regard to these, they think it strange that you do not run with them in the same flood of dissipation, speaking evil of you. 5 They will give an account to Him who is ready to judge the living and the dead. 6 For this reason the gospel was preached also to those who are dead, that they might be judged according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit.



§ antitype – *antitypon*: **Representative action, a symbolic example that points to a greater truth**

§ this 'antitype' is symbolized by water baptism

○ which does not save a person because it does not remove sins like the blood of Jesus does

○ which does honor God publicly. How? **SYMBOLICALLY!**
by identifying with the death, burial and resurrection of Jesus Christ – death (in the hands and power of those doing the baptizing), burial (going under the water) and resurrection (raised up out of the water)

§ baptism is symbolic of a complete break with one's past life and a public statement of the change that has already occurred in the heart of the person being baptized

§ baptism is a step of Christian maturity that requires our witness to be mature

§ when we are baptized, we proclaim three things: Christ was resurrected, He did ascend to heaven, and He now sits on God's throne, ruling over ranks of angels (angels, authorities and powers)

Lessons from the opposites game: ***I'm going to say a word, you say the opposite Tall-short; big-small; dark, light Sin-holiness; Satan----- NOT GOD OR CHRIST –Satan and all his angels were created by God the Father, Son and Holy Spirit***

Provocative Question of the Day: Are we human beings undergoing a spiritual experience, or are we spiritual beings undergoing a human experience?

Q1: Regarding verse 4:1, the "Therefore" ties together 'since Christ suffered for us in the flesh' with a command to do what? Why?

Arm yourself with the same mind (as Jesus Christ), because we are engaged in a WAR – recall Ephesians 6 on previous page...

§ arm yourselves – *holplisasthe* ***a military term meaning to equip ones' self with weapons***

- we need armor for this age of dec deceit, which is our mature duty
- requires us to have a mil militant attitude about sin

§ same mind – *auteen eenoien* ***one's own self's moral understanding or intent***

- it is the en tire process from thought through response / action

§ 'ceased from sin' is God's past action rele releasing us from sin's power

- we are unable to live a per perfect life, but sin no longer r rules us

Double Trouble?

"I understand the armor, but I don't put it all on every day."



"I don't understand the armor, but I do put it all on daily."

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Verse 2 that he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh for the lusts of men, but for the will of God.

§ speaks of our mo moment by mo moment choices

§ two categories of people:

- o those who choose to live in the fl flesh in the lu lusts of an unsaved human being
- o those who choose to live for the w will of God
- o the difference comes down to di discipline in our moment by moment choices
- o you cannot have it BOTH ways!

§ as a Christian, you have a choice to live as an un unbeliever or a dis disciple...and the choice is a reflection of the life example you live and the level of ma maturity that you have



Verse 3 For we have spent enough of our past lifetime in doing the will of the Gentiles — when we walked in lewdness, lusts, drunkenness, revelries, drinking parties, and abominable idolatries.

Q2: What does this say about the past lives of the people that Peter was writing to?

Clearly the folks that Peter was fellowshiping with had a past that involved a bunch of bad behavior. Peter includes himself in this group as well (“for we have spent”)

Q3: What are your two most important areas of stewardship? Support your answer.

First, your heart: Proverbs 4:23NIV - Above all else, guard your heart, for it is the wellspring of life.

Second, your time: Psalm 90:12 NKJV - 12 So teach us to number our days, that we may gain a heart of wisdom. Ephesians 5:16 NKJV - See then that you walk circumspectly, not as fools but as wise, 16 redeeming the time, because the days are evil.

à fill in the blank

§ time is not on my side; I have about ### of weekends left

§ in verse 3, there is a def definite bre break with our past that is required to live as ‘mature’

§ ‘doing the will of the Gentiles’ – *living like a pagan, unsaved person*

Isn't This the Stuff Required in a Great Hollywood Movie?

Lewdness	aselgeia	<i>wantonness, filthy sexual perversion</i>
Lusts	epithumia	<i>a longing for what is forbidden</i>
Drunkenness	oinophulgia	<i>to drink alcohol to excess so as to be drunk</i>
Revelries	koomois	<i>to lose one's sense of judgment and completely let loose as if drunk</i>
Drinking parties	potos	<i>to be drunk in public with others; rioting and reveling</i>
Abominable	athemitos	<i>an affront to God – unlawful – worship of other gods literally or figuratively</i>
idolatries	eidololatria	<i>“anathema” = loathed to the point of being cursed</i>

Û compare these ‘movie script elements’ with the movies of the 50’s and 60’s

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Verses 4-6: In regard to these, they think it strange that you do not run with them in the same flood of dissipation, speaking evil of you. 5 They will give an account to Him who is ready to judge the living and the dead. 6 For this reason the gospel was preached also to those who are dead, that they might be judged according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit.



- § run with them - *suntrechontoon* **rush headlong; hastily assemble with them**
- § flood of dissipation - *asotia anachusis* **excessive unsavedness riotous in doing the list of v3**
- § speaking evil of you - *blasphemo* **blaspheme, heap abuse upon**

Q4: Why do unbelievers think it strange that you do not join them in this behavior?

- § **Because they see nothing wrong with it. The behavior in itself is selfish, focused on not being bound to follow any type of moral code; the thrill of being 'on the edge' and doing what is against good sense.**
- § **They reinforce each other's behavior as OK; what is on the edge becomes the norm until a new edge is found, leading to a downward spiral.**
- § **Your reluctance to join them is an indictment on their behavior, and they do not want to be reminded that they are accountable for their behavior...**

John 15:18-22: 25 NKJV

"If the world hates you, you know that it hated Me before it hated you. 19 If you were of the world, the world would love its own. Yet because you are not of the world, but I chose you out of the world, therefore the world hates you. 20 Remember the word that I said to you, 'A servant is not greater than his master.' If they persecuted Me, they will also persecute you. If they kept My word, they will keep yours also. 21 But all these things they will do to you for My name's sake, because they do not know Him who sent Me 25 But this happened that the word might be fulfilled which is written in their law, 'They hated Me without a cause.'

- § give an account - *apodoosousin logon* **Deliver, perform or render an reasoning about or explanation of Logon ... logos...discourse**
- § we all have an appointment to give an account in front of the Judge, Jesus Christ **we are trying to ace the final**
- § the seat of accountability is in the h heart, not the m mind **U a move to escape accountability**
- § Psalm 14:1a NKJV The fool has said in his heart, "There is no God ." They are corrupt; they have done abominable works
- § Ever notice how those who knowingly commit a wrong may get aggressive about it as well, almost as if by getting in your face, you will somehow overlook their wrong and think that it was your fault?

U seems to be common, especially when someone is caught in a lie or red-handed, to brazen it out



To whom is he preaching?

The message of salvation being preached to the dead!

Q5: Explain how preaching the gospel to the dead (verse 6a) is an effective thing to do? If the person is dead, how can it profit them or you to hear the words of salvation?

This does not refer to the physically dead, but to those who are physically alive but spiritually dead (i.e.; yet unsaved). They are the ones who need to hear the message of salvation, even though if they do nothing about it, they remain dead. Literally, the earth is full of 'dead men walking' each of whom God wants to reach to bring them into the kingdom of light...

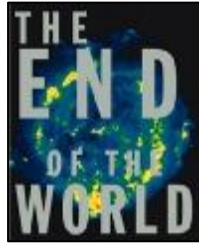
- § We are to l live so as to give account, not to men, but to Him Who is to judge the living and the dead when He returns to power. This is the mature Christian walk to which we are called...

Ephesians 2:4-13 NKJV

But God, who is rich in mercy, because of His great love with which He loved us, 5 even when we were dead in trespasses, made us alive together with Christ (by grace you have been saved), 6 and raised us up together, and made us sit together in the heavenly places in Christ Jesus, 7 that in the ages to come He might show the exceeding riches of His grace in His kindness toward us in Christ Jesus. 8 For by grace you have been saved through faith, and that not of yourselves; it is the gift of God, 9 not of works, lest anyone should boast. 10 For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God prepared beforehand that we should walk in them. 11 Therefore remember that you, once Gentiles in the flesh — who are called Uncircumcision by what is called the Circumcision made in the flesh by hands — 12 that at that time you were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope and without God in the world. 13 But now in Christ Jesus you who once were far off have been brought near by the blood of Christ.

I LOVE BIG BUTS, and this is one of them! BUT GOD! v4; BUT NOW! v13

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)



13. Does the END Justify the MEANS?

1 Peter 4:7-15 NKJV

But the end of all things is at hand; therefore be serious and watchful in your prayers. 8 And above all things have fervent love for one another, for "love will cover a multitude of sins." 9 Be hospitable to one another without grumbling. 10 As each one has received a gift, minister it to one another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God. 11 If anyone speaks, let him speak as the oracles of God. If anyone ministers, let him do it as with the ability which God supplies, that in all things God may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom belong the glory and the dominion forever and ever. Amen.

Fact: we are closer to the end times today that at any time in human history...

Jesus Christ told us that we should expect to have our ambassadorship recall at any time, and be raptured into heaven (Matthew 24:42; 25:13; Mark13:35; Luke 21:34-36). Because the end is in view, we are to:

§ live so as to give an account to Jesus Christ (v5; will happen shortly after our recall)

§ be serious – *sophroneo* sane, of sound mind (vs. panicked, drunk, delusional about the things of this world, insensitive to the facts, living to self, etc,

o the things of this world are insanity and part of Satan's plot to make you stupid

§ be watchful (*nepho*) in our prayers not drunk, both literally and figuratively; pray earnestly/worship

§ be fervent (*ektenes* = without ceasing) in our love (*agape*) for each fellow believer

o God despises the lukewarm – see Revelation 3:16 Rev 3:16 So then, because you are lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will vomit you out of My mouth.

o This is directed to fellow believers – why? Because as it become increasingly dangerous to be a believer, we will need to take care of one another AND demonstrate love by actions

Q1: How does agape love (sacrificial, Jesus-Christ kind of love) cover a multitude of sins? (hint: Galatians 6:1 and James 5:19-20)

While we are not to be indifferent to sin, we are to help those who are overtaken with a fault

Gal 6:1-2 Brethren, if a man is overtaken in any trespass, you who are spiritual restore such a one in a spirit of gentleness, considering yourself lest you also be tempted. 2 Bear one another's burdens, and so fulfill the law of Christ.

James 5:19-20 Brethren, if anyone among you wanders from the truth, and someone turns him back, 20 let him know that he who turns a sinner from the error of his way will save a soul from death and cover a multitude of sins.

§ be hospitale *philozenos* fond of, given over to using hospitality to serve believers as guests

§ without grumbling - *gogguzmos* murmuring, complaining – an aspect of passive disobedience God hates

§ be ministering to fellow believers in deed and word this is the 'mature Christian' thing to do it should not be about us, but about others

o another prime 'stewardship' is ministering the manifold grace of God like heart, time p64

o How we do this: What does God's many-faceted grace look like? It is seen clearly in what we say and what we do, especially to fellow members of our own family ('the body')

o be speaking the oracles (*logion*) of God We are to encourage and exhort each other with

o exercising your spiritual gifts to serve the body

§ a failure to do this results in your defrauding the body, who is then missing your contribution

§ minister with the ability that God supplies He supplies, your work is to do

o the perfect answer to "I don't feel like it

§ by doing this, you are glorifying God in everything that you do = WORSHIP

If you were accused of being a Christian, is there enough evidence to indict you?



1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

-----x x x x x x-----

Mini Study 6: The Grumbling Effect

1 Peter 4:9 tells us to be hospitable to one another without *grumbling*. "Grumbling" doesn't seem like all that big of a deal, compared to all the things that we could be doing that goes against God's commandments, like murder, theft, blasphemy, pride and the like...does it?

MSQ1: What are the ways that we 'grumble'?

- § *Stuck in slow traffic*
- § *Co-workers who do things we don't like*
- § *Fellow believers who do things we don't like*
- § *Leaders who do things we don't like*
- § *Political disagreements*
- § *Sports teams – why losers for so long?*
- § *Don't like what our spouse/kids did or didn't do*
- § *Don't like the commercials on a TV show*
- § *Dislike of taxes and other governmental levies*
- § *Don't like the weather today – too hot/cold/dry/wet*
- §
- § *Faces/rolling eyes/complaints/passive disobedience/evil thoughts/attitudes/holding grudges/bitching*

MSQ2: Is 'grumbling' on the rise or on the decline in today's society? Why or why not?

It seems like everybody has a litany of complaints today...something is always not right or not according to the way that we think that it should be, so we complain about it.

It is on the rise, I believe, because we have things way too easy and we have way too much free time / purposeless time on our hands. So we begin to find things to complain about – which is easy – as we consider what is wrong, rather than what is right...

MSQ3: A get-honest question for yourself: list the ways that you have grumbled over the past 24 hours...be specific!

Good list

MSQ4: In the scheme of things, is grumbling a 'major violation' for a Christian? Why or why not? Support your answer.

Not – because it is not to the level of other sins committed against people, especially if we are complaining to ourselves out of earshot of others...

Yes – because it shows a basic distrust of, and dissatisfaction with God and the way that He is handling things. Grumbling is rooted in selfishness and a desire to be God, and run things that way that you want to run them. Selfishness is the richer cousin of pride; both pride and selfishness are key reasons that Satan got kicked out of heaven!



1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Let's take a look at what God says about grumbling, grumblers and how He has dealt with grumblers before...



1 Corinthians 10:1-10 NKJV

Moreover, brethren, I do not want you to be unaware that all our fathers were under the cloud, all passed through the sea, 2 all were baptized into Moses in the cloud and in the sea, 3 all ate the same spiritual food, 4 and all drank the same spiritual drink. For they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them, and that Rock was Christ. 5 But with most of them God was not well pleased, for their bodies were scattered in the wilderness.

MSQ5: What parallels does Paul draw about how much the children of Israel were like "Christians" of today?

Paul makes the point that Christ sustained the children of Israel while they escaped from Egypt. They had the benefit of the Shekinah Glory, the visible manifestation of God's presence, were first-hand witnesses of miracles in Egypt, culminating in the parting of the Red Sea, where they walked across on dry land, had God supply manna and quail, and water from the Rock (Christ) in the desert...

All of this, and God was not pleased with most of them!

6 Now these things became our examples, to the intent that we should not lust after evil things as they also lusted. 7 And do not become idolaters as were some of them. As it is written, "The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play." 8 Nor let us commit sexual immorality, as some of them did, and in one day twenty-three thousand fell; 9 nor let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed by serpents; 10 nor complain, as some of them also complained, and were destroyed by the destroyer.

MSQ6: What were the four things that God 'scattered their [dead] bodies in the wilderness' for?

1. *lust after the evil things that they lusted after (we are not told what these were in this passage)*
2. *becoming idolaters, weaving it into the fabric of their daily routine*
3. *committing sexual immorality (refers to the events of Number 25:1-3)*
4. *complaining*

It is amazing to see complaining cited as one of the four reasons that the Israelites were allowed to die in the wilderness...and this is stated here FOR OUR EXAMPLES so that we do not do the same things!

Locate Exodus 15:22 - 17:7 and read through part of the historical record...

MSQ7: List the things that the Israelites grumbled about, citing the references next to each.

- Exodus 14 - the Red Sea crossing and miraculous deliverance*
- Exodus 15 - the praise songs of Moses & Miriam, plus the bitter waters made drinkable at Marah*
- 15:24 - complained about not having water; Moses explained that God would keep them disease-free if they obeyed*
- 16:2 - complained they had no food and that they were better off in Egypt as slaves*
- 16:8 - the real object of their complaints was God, not leadership*
- 16:20 - not following an order given by God is a form of passive disobedience*
- 16:27 - not following another order given by God is a form of passive disobedience*
- 17:2, 3 - contended with Moses because there was no water*
- 17:4 - Moses complains to God about the people complaining!*

MSQ8: What lessons does God want us to learn about the consequences of grumbling?

- § *God is patient for a little while, and then finally has had enough when we refuse to trust Him*
- § *As God provides examples in our lives of supernatural intervention to solve problems, we should GROW UP and begin to trust Him more and more*
- § *Ultimately, grumbling is a form of treason against God, and punishable by death*
- § *Grumbling is viral, infecting the whole community*
- § *Grumbling looks at things through a selfish, "I wanna be God" lens, while trust lived out in action demonstrates a heavenly perspective of earthly things*

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

So...what about the really difficult things of life, when we are persecuted, or fall into a very difficult situation, like a health condition...or a financial loss...or a family crisis...or a pastoral change?

U these are the extraordinarily difficult things in life, the ones that stun us and shake us

U continuing the previous passage from I Corinthians...

1 Corinthians 10:10-13 NKJV

...nor complain, as some of them also complained, and were destroyed by the destroyer. 11 Now all these things happened to them as examples, and they were written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the ages have come.

12 Therefore let him who thinks he stands take heed lest he fall. 13 No temptation has overtaken you except such as is common to man; but God is faithful, who will not allow you to be tempted beyond what you are able, but with the temptation will also make the way of escape, that you may be able to bear it.

MSQ9: According to this passage by Paul, what specifically did God want us (the ones who live in difficult times) to understand about the trouble that the Children of Israel got themselves into?

That what happened to them could happen to us, if we so choose!

God doesn't change, so what angers Him doesn't change.

Instead, we should learn from these examples to trust God, that He has our best interests at heart...

MSQ10: What specifically are we to 'take heed' about? How does this directly relate to finding ourselves in circumstances under which we could (and often do), complain?

Recognize that nothing is allowed to happen to us that is not already "Father filtered." Jus like was the case with Job, as difficult as things were in his life (see Job 1 & 2) he did not accuse God of wrongdoing, and instead recognized that there were things that he did not understand. But he trusted God enough that he did not complain...

Nothing is allowed to happen to us that God does not provide the way out...and that way is to TRUST Him. We wither believe Him or we don't...and that is a sure sign of maturity..

Are there any exceptions to the NO GRUMBLING rule? Consider these 2 extreme examples of dealing with a 'complainable' situation...

Jude 9 NKJV

Exposit these two examples

Yet Michael the archangel, in contending with the devil, when he disputed about the body of Moses, **dared not bring against him a reviling accusation, but said, "The Lord rebuke you!"**

Job 2:7-10 NKJV

So Satan went out from the presence of the LORD, and struck Job with painful boils from the sole of his foot to the crown of his head. 8 And he took for himself a potsherd with which to scrape himself while he sat in the midst of the ashes. 9 Then his wife said to him, "Do you still hold fast to your integrity? Curse God and die!" 10 But he said to her, "You speak as one of the foolish women speaks. Shall we indeed accept good from God, and shall we not accept adversity?" **In all this Job did not sin with his lips.**

As Careful in Living?



Like this golfer analyzing specifically what to do next, do you stop and think through what God might have in store when He allows you to go through challenging times?

A peek ahead at 1 Peter 5:6-7 and Romans 8:28 reveal our clear solution to grumbling:

1 Peter 5:6-7 NIV

Humble yourselves, therefore, under God's mighty hand, that he may lift you up in due time. 7 Cast all your anxiety on him because he cares for you.

Romans 8:28 NKJV

B the three most important words of this verse: AND WE KNOW (not guess, suspect, wish

And we know that all things work together for good to those who love God, to those who are the called according to His purpose.

§ Recognize that grumbling is the sin of not tr trusting God while accusing Him of lying.

§ I nstead, take it to the Cross and leave it there.

§ Every day God will find a different way to ask you: Do your trust me? ?

Philippians 2:14-15 NKJV Do all things without complaining and disputing, 15 that you may become blameless and harmless, children of God without fault in the midst of a crooked and perverse generation, among whom you shine as lights in the world...



1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

14. On Trial for the Name of Christ!

1 Peter 4:12-19 NKJV

Beloved, do not think it strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened to you; 13 but rejoice to the extent that you partake of Christ's sufferings, that when His glory is revealed, you may also be glad with exceeding joy. 14 If you are reproached for the name of Christ, blessed are you, for the Spirit of glory and of God rests upon you. On their part He is blasphemed, but on your part He is glorified. 15 But let none of you suffer as a murderer, a thief, an evildoer, or as a busybody in other people's matters. 16 Yet if anyone suffers as a Christian, let him not be ashamed, but let him glorify God in this matter.



17 For the time has come for judgment to begin at the house of God; and if it begins with us first, what will be the end of those who do not obey the gospel of God? 18 Now "If the righteous one is scarcely saved, Where will the ungodly and the sinner appear?"

19 Therefore let those who suffer according to the will of God commit their souls to Him in doing good, as to a faithful Creator.

Q1: 1 Peter was written in about AD 68. What things were imminently pending, as prophesied by Jesus?

One, the destruction of the temple and Jewish life as they new it was a mere two years away (recall the Olivet Discourse, of which Peter was a first-hand participant (James, John, Peter and Andrew)

Two, Jesus warned of increasing persecution, which by 68AD was very bad under both the Jewish leadership as well as under Nero...

Q2: According to verses 12 to 14, how was the mature Christian to deal with these events?

Rather than to complain, or suffer in silence, to actually rejoice that God thought them worthy enough to have to go through suffering for Him. This requires us to completely change our views about trials, sufferings, etc. and stop being so selfish as to think about ourselves principally (the IMMATURE VIEW), but to see things as God would want us see them as MATURE believers...

To whom much is given, much is asked. The blessing that results from being asked by God to suffer for the name of Christ is one that is paid in heaven, and it is great!

A mature Christian has an understanding of why trials happen, and the value of them...

Romans 8:17 NIV

17 Now if we are children, then we are heirs — heirs of God and co-heirs with Christ, if indeed we share in his sufferings in order that we may also share in his glory.

Û assign Scriptures to be looked up and read See Add. Notes Pages

Trials for a Christian Produces T.R.I.U.M.P.H. – Dr. Bill Bright, Campus Crusade

WHY WE SUFFER TRIALS	SCRIPTURAL REFERENCES
Training in Obedience	Psalms 119:66-68;71; Hebrews 5:8-9
Refinement in Character	Hebrews 12:5b-11; Isaiah 48:10; Job 23:10
Intimacy with God is Produced	Job 42:1-5; Psalm 34:17-19
Understanding the Hurts of Others	Hebrews 4:15; 2 Corinthians 1:4-6
Maturity for Ministering to Others	2 Corinthians 1:4-6; 1 Thessalonians 1:6-8
Perseverance in Difficult Times	James 1:2-3; Romans 5:3-4
Hope for a Secure Future	1 Peter 1:6-7; James 1:12

"You can tell a lot about a Christian's maturity by how he or she responds to adversity." W. Duffy

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Verses 15-16: But let none of you suffer as a murderer, a thief, an evildoer, or as a busybody in other people's matters. 16 Yet if anyone suffers as a Christian, let him not be ashamed, but let him glorify God in this matter.

Q3: Why the admonition to not be found doing the four things listed? And why is a busybody listed among murderer, thief and evildoer?

Being ashamed implies that you have done the things listed, all of which bring shame upon the name of Christ when it becomes known that a Christian has committed these things. The list is illustrative for the things that are done in the flesh that show a lack of Christian maturity.

Stewardship of the tongue is a fundamental element of maturity, as it demonstrates self-control. Being a busybody demonstrates a lack of self-control and there fore is a telltale sign of immaturity!

Ü consequences; witness

Suffering the cons_____ of our own sin provides a negative

wi_____ to others of being a Christian. Suffering unjustly for the name of Christ is just the opposite.

§ v16: the third time the term 'Christian' is used in the Bible (Acts 11:26 and 26:28 are the other two)

§ "not be ashamed" – *aischunumai* **To feel shame for ones' self so as to become disfigured**

§ Romans 1:16 NKJV For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ, for it is the power of God to salvation for everyone who believes

§ 2 Timothy 1:12 NKJV For this reason I also suffer these things; nevertheless I am not ashamed, for I know whom I have believed and am persuaded that He is able to keep what I have committed to Him until that Day.

§ 1 John 2:28 NKJV And now, little children, abide in Him, that when He appears, we may have confidence and not be ashamed before Him at His coming.



Verse 17-19: For the time has come for judgment to begin at the house of God; and if it begins with us first, what will be the end of those who do not obey the gospel of God? 18 Now "If the righteous one is scarcely saved, where will the ungodly and the sinner appear?" 19 Therefore let those who suffer according to the will of God commit their souls to Him in doing good, as to a faithful Creator.

§ judgment - *krima* **A decision rendered by a judge for or against a crime**

Q4: Why should judgment begin at the 'house of God'? **Because we should know better! We were called out of darkness and into light, given eternal life, given an ability to understand and apply Scripture to our lives...and so we are without excuse. Jesus: to whom much is given, much is required (Luke 12:48)**

Since discipline is for our good, to grow us into obedience, ours should be the first stop on the judgment train...

Since it begins with Christians, those who do not obey the gospel of God and live carnally will have a steep price to pay – not loss of salvation, but bankrupting of rewards and status in eternity...



§ This 'judgment' is a call for us to live as a ma mature Christian **GROW UP!**

§ A Christian is a pil pilgrim - not of, but living in the world, as an ambassador

§ We are to com commit our very lives to the Creator by 'doing good' in this perverse world

§ We are to be declaring everywhere God's offer of salvation through the completed work of His Son

"Preach the gospel everywhere, and if necessary, use words." St. Francis of Assisi

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

15. Responsibilities of the Church in Troubled Times



1 Peter 5:1-7 NKJV

The elders who are among you I exhort, I who am a fellow elder and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that will be revealed: 2 Shepherd the flock of God which is among you, serving as overseers, not by compulsion but willingly, not for dishonest gain but eagerly; 3 nor as being lords over those entrusted to you, but being examples to the flock; 4 and when the Chief Shepherd appears, you will receive the crown of glory that does not fade away.

5 Likewise you younger people, submit yourselves to your elders. Yes, all of you be submissive to one another, and be clothed with humility, for "God resists the proud, but gives grace to the humble." 6 Therefore humble yourselves under the mighty hand of God, that He may exalt you in due time, 7 casting all your care upon Him, for He cares for you.

§ elder – *presbyteros* **Used twice in verse 1, it is the office of Elder (a Jewish Sanhedrist, ruling council)**

§ Peter was both an ap apostle - an eyew eyewitness of, and appointed by, Jesus Christ, a co-e co-elder with others, and a co-h co-heir of the future glory (yet to be revealed).

Q1: What was Peter specifically told to do by Jesus Christ in John 21:16? What is his exhortation to the elders in the churches to whom he was writing?

He was told to feed Christ's sheep, shepherd His lambs, and shepherd His sheep. He is telling them essentially to do the very same thing, thus establishing some of the job description for an elder

§ shepherd – *poimaino* **feed and tend as a shepherd (an Eastern shepherd)**

§ overseers – *episkopos* **to look diligently over one's charge as a fiduciary; word used for the office of Elder**

Q2: Specific instructions are given in verses 2 and 3 as to the role of elder, three 'do's' and three 'do not's.' Explain what they mean, giving specific modern day examples to illustrate how they would be applied in today's church.

THE DO-NOTs of ELDERING		THE DOs of ELDERING	
Specific Instructions	What it means - example	Specific Instructions	What it means - example
not by compulsion	not to be an elder because you are guilted into it, forced into it or talked into it.. Compulsion is also translated 'constraint'	willingly	to serve with a desiring heart and feeling called by God to serve in this capacity
not for dishonest gain	not serving as an elder for money, profit or gain. There is a sense that a wrong motive is to extort monies out of flock	eagerly	you desire to serve because you believe that God has called you to it, and desire to see God glorified and be a blessing
not being lords over those entrusted to you	exercising dominion or subjugating the people whom God has entrusted to your care – a fiduciary responsibility	being examples to the flock	live as a mature Christian, as an example of what a mature Christian does, both in and out of public view

Q3: How do verses 1-4 eliminate the possibility, as some religions claim, that Peter was the first Pope?

Peter claims that he is just a fellow elder, and never claims equality with the "Chief Shepherd" but rather places himself at the same level, or even a level underneath the people to whom God has called him to shepherd. Specifically, this passage refutes the concept that the clergy is somehow over the laity, as the Nicolaitans did (See Add'l Notes)

§ The 'crown of glory' is a reward for fai faithful stewardship; being a fidu fiduciary

§ This is a crown that, according to Rev. 4:4, 10, will be cast at the feet of Jesus, post resurrection and in heaven

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Fiduciary – adjective [fí - doo - she - err - ee]



1. The relation existing when one person places confidence, faith, and reliance in another whose aid, advice, and protection is sought in some matter;
2. The relation existing when good conscience requires one to act at all times for the sole benefit and interests of another with loyalty to those interests;
3. The relation by law existing between certain classes of persons (as confidential advisors and the one advised; executors or administrators and legatees or heirs; corporate directors or officers...).

All Christians are called to be one-another's FIDUCIARY...

1 Corinthians 4:1-2 NKJV

Let a man so consider us, as servants of Christ and stewards of the mysteries of God. 2 Moreover it is required in stewards that one be found faithful .

Ephesians 6:5-9 NKJV

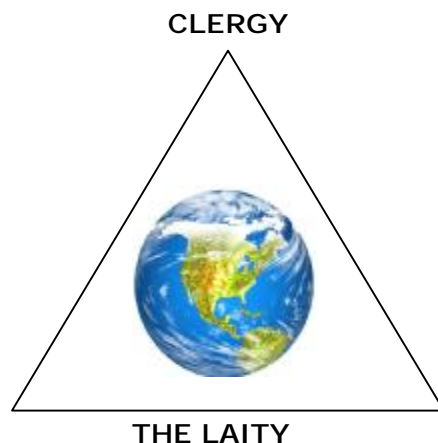
Bondservants, be obedient to those who are your masters according to the flesh, with fear and trembling, in sincerity of heart, as to Christ; 6 not with eyeservice, as men-pleasers, but as bondservants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart, 7 with goodwill doing service, as to the Lord, and not to men, 8 knowing that whatever good anyone does, he will receive the same from the Lord, whether he is a slave or free. 9 And you, masters, do the same things to them, giving up threatening, knowing that your own Master also is in heaven, and there is no partiality with Him.

Even the court system agrees with the high standards of a fiduciary:

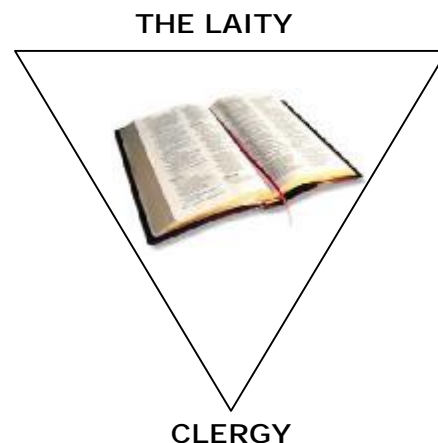
- § Many forms of conduct permissible in a workaday world for those acting at arm's length, are forbidden to those bound by fiduciary ties. A trustee is held to something stricter than the morals of the marketplace. Not honesty alone, but the punctilio of an honor the most sensitive, is then the standard of behavior. As to this there has developed a tradition that is unbending and inveterate. Uncompromising rigidity has been the attitude of the courts of equity when petitioned to undermine the rule of undivided loyalty by the "disintegrating erosion" of particular exceptions... Only thus has the level of conduct for fiduciaries been kept at a level higher than that trodden by the crowd. - Justice Cardozo, Meinhard v. Salmon
- § The fiduciary relationship imposes a duty to act in accordance with the highest standards which a man of the finest sense of honor might impose upon himself.... It recognizes the frailty of human nature; it realizes that where a man's immediate fortunes are concerned he may sometimes be subject to a blindness often intuitive and compulsive. This rule is designed on the one hand to prevent clouded conception of fidelity and a moral indifference that blurs the vision, and on other hand, to stimulate the most luminous critical sense and the finest exercise of judgment uncontaminated by the dross of prejudice, of divided allegiance, or of self-interest. - Justice Shientag, Litwin v. Allen

Comparing the Biblical Model with the World Model for Church Leadership

The Practical Application of 1 Peter 5:1-5 Shows Why Most World Religions Have it WRONG



The World's View



The Biblical View

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Verses 5-7: Likewise you younger people, submit yourselves to your elders. Yes, all of you be submissive to one another, and be clothed with humility, for "God resists the proud, but gives grace to the humble." 6 Therefore humble yourselves under the mighty hand of God, that He may exalt you in due time, 7 casting all your care upon Him, for He cares for you.

- § younger people - *neoteroi* **Would refer to those who are new or 'younger' in their faith**
- § submit yourselves - *hupatasso* **To obey, to place yourself under the direction or oversight of**
- § elders - *presbuterios* **Collectively, the office of Elder who are to oversee and shepherd the church**



Q4: How does this verse establish governance in a church, and between the members of a local body? What needs to be absent from the body?

It is clear from this passage that Elders are to be leading the body. Just as the Elder (and all church leadership) are to be subject to Christ, wives to their husbands, children to their parents, members of a local body are to be subject to the leadership of that local body.

The governing quality is that of humility; pride robs, and is a barrier to spiritual progress. Leaders who act out of pride are poor choices for leadership; members of the body who act out of pride cause division. The net effect is that pride destroys and is a chief tool of Satan...

Q5: In what ways does God deal with prideful behavior?

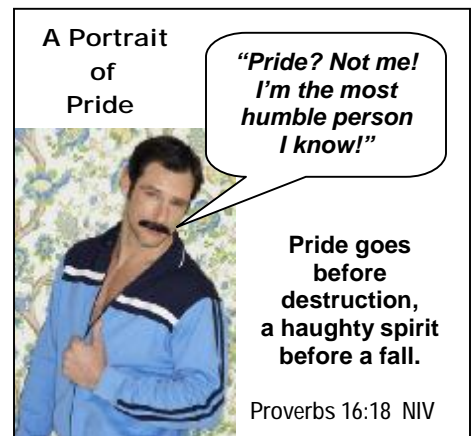
He may choose to deal with them through the hand of fellow man (believer and unbeliever alike), or may choose to bring natural consequences upon the person via discipline, or may choose to allow the pride to continue on for His good purposes (we cannot see all that He is doing to deal with people) but make no mistake, God will deal with it in due time, and the chastisement may be multiplied through disobedience of the person resisting God's correction...

Q6: What is the conditional (IF-THEN) promise implicit in verse 6?

If we humble ourselves before God (and man), God will – when we can handle it – and in His good time, exalt us. It may or may not be in this life, even.

Conversely, those who persist in prideful behavior will continuously be brought down by God because of their pride...

- § casting – *epirrhipito* **to throw upon, from *epi*, meaning upon, and *rhipito*, to deliberately hurl with sudden motion**
- § 'casting' does not mean pol_____ **politely** handing over our burdens, but literally throwing them with fo_____ **force** to Jesus.



Three reasons why we can cast our burdens upon Jesus Christ:

Matthew 6:25-34 NKJV **He knows why you might be feeling off -he wants to hear from you, not as a last resort!**

"Therefore I say to you, do not worry about your life, what you will eat or what you will drink; nor about your body, what you will put on. Is not life more than food and the body more than clothing? 26 Look at the birds of the air, for they neither sow nor reap nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not of more value than they? 27 Which of you by worrying can add one cubit to his stature? 28 "So why do you worry about clothing? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow: they neither toil nor spin; 29 and yet I say to you that even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. 30 Now if God so clothes the grass of the field, which today is, and tomorrow is thrown into the oven, will He not much more clothe you, O you of little faith? 31 "Therefore do not worry, saying, 'What shall we eat?' or 'What shall we drink?' or 'What shall we wear?' 32 For after all these things the Gentiles seek. For your heavenly Father knows that you need all these things. 33 But seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added to you.

Psalm 55:22 NKJV

Cast your burden on the LORD, and He shall sustain you; He shall never permit the righteous to be moved.

Matt hew10:29-31 NKJV

Are not two sparrows sold for a copper coin? And not one of them falls to the ground apart from your Father's will. 30 But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. 31 Do not fear therefore; you are of more value than many sparrows.

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

16. Knowing Your Enemy

1 Peter 5:8-11 NKJV

Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil walks about like a roaring lion, seeking whom he may devour. 9 Resist him, steadfast in the faith, knowing that the same sufferings are experienced by your brotherhood in the world. 10 But may the God of all grace, who called us to His eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after you have suffered a while, perfect, establish, strengthen, and settle you. 11 To Him be the glory and the dominion forever and ever. Amen.

§ sober - *nepho* **abstain from anything that de-sensitizes, like wine**

§ vigilant - *gregoreuo* **to vigilantly keep awake and alert**

§ adversary - *antidikos* **an opponent out to get you**

§ devour - *katapino* **engulph, devour, swallow whole, gulp entirely like a flash flood**

Satan is bitter, real, angry, mali malignant and

reso resourceful. However, he is not all-powpowerful, all-kno knowing or omnipresent.

§ Peter may have been making a veiled reference to the lions of Nero in the arena.

Q1: What is Peter's suggested tactic to deal with Satan's prowling about in search of us? How is this tactic validated by James 4:7 and John 10:27-29?

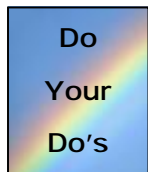
Resist Satan (stand firm, withstand) by being steadfast in the faith. We would not be told to do this if it were not possible! And we don't stand in our strength, but in our belief in what God has told us

James 4:7

Therefore submit to God. Resist the devil and he will flee from you.

John 10:27-29

27 My sheep hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow Me. 28 And I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish; neither shall anyone snatch them out of My hand. 29 My Father, who has given them to Me, is greater than all; and no one is able to snatch them out of My Father's hand.



We cannot be taken out of the clasped hands of the Father and the Son Ú



Lions often roar to frighten their prey and flush them out of hiding, so that the lion can more easily catch them and kill them. Is Satan's roars an attempt to maneuver you into the open, away from the Rock of Refuge?

§ v9: recognize that you are not singled out for persecution; it is a world -wide phenomenon

§ you are also never a alone during the times that you face persecution:

Deuteronomy 31:6 NKJV Be strong and of good courage, do not fear nor be afraid of them; for the LORD your God, He is the One who goes with you. He will not leave you nor forsake you."

§ v10: keep an ete eternal perspective of your tem temporary sufferings

§ perfect - *katartizo* **kata + artios - in context, completely restore to perfection - - - Artios - the ship complete**

§ establish - *sterizo* **to turn strongly in a new direction, then stay on course for that direction**

§ strengthen - *sthenoo* **re-invigorate with new energy; bodily strengthen to be able to endure**

§ settle - *themelioo* **put the foundation in place for, so it may be built upon**

§ The quality of the building reflects the competency of the builder, who is God the Father, therefore the benefits of maturing during times of trouble are guar guaranteed by the builder!

As a Christian matures, it is God who deserves the glory, for it was as a result of His dominion!

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

-----x x x x x-----

Mini Study 7: Your Enemy Unmasked - The Life and Times of Satan

"Know your enemy, for if you know your enemy and know yourself, you need not fear the result of a hundred battles."

Ū from Sun Tzu, Chinese warlord, The Art of War

MSQ1: In 25 words or less, describe who Satan is from the world's point of view (what or whom most uninformed people say he is).

Good discussion question for small groups.

Likely will point out that most people believe in a devil, but are very ignorant of who he is or how he came to be...will assume that he is the equal of God and the personification of evil...



MSQ2: How has this view served to further his purposes?

Because he is the liar and deceiver, he is mistakenly believed to be things he is not (all-powerful, omniscient, omnipresent, easily recognized in or out of costume, since he has a beard, etc.). Ignorant people cannot fight an enemy they do not know, and like the pickpocket, they are not even aware of what he is at work on in their lives, and on this planet in the affairs of men...

READ THE LIST OF NT ATTRIBUTES



You and I are engaged in a vast spiritual battle that rages on all around us. Scripture points out that our enemy is Satan who is described in the following partial list of New Testament passages as:

- § The one whose bondage requires God's deliverance – Matthew 6:13, Luke 11:4 & John 17:15
- § The one who is not mindful of the things of God - Matthew 16:23 & Mark 8:33
- § The one who snatches away the truth from people before they can believe – Mark 4:15
- § The one whom God cast out of heaven, along with his evil angels – Luke 10:18 & Revelation 12:9
- § The one who makes people sick – Luke 13:16
- § The one who possesses people and makes them do his evil will – Luke 22:3 & John 13:27
- § The Father of Lies; the truth is not in him – John 8:44
- § The first murderer – John 8:44
- § The one who incites people to lie – Acts 5:3
- § The one who oppresses and makes sick – Acts 10:38
- § The one who imprisons people in darkness – Acts 26:18
- § The one who tempts you when you lack self-control – I Corinthians 7:5
- § The one who seeks to take advantage of you - 2 Corinthians 2:11
- § The one who impersonates good angels - 2 Corinthians 11:14
- § The one who actively hinders God's people as they do His work - 2 Cor. 12:7 & 1 Thes. 2:18
- § The one who uses wiles and deception to keep people in darkness – Ephesians 6:11
- § The one who ensnares and forces the ensnared to do his evil will - 2 Timothy 2:26
- § The lawless one who uses great power, deception, signs, and lying wonders - 2 Thessalonians 2:9
- § The one who has been sinning from the beginning – I John 3:8
- § The one who has a false church – Revelation 2:9 & 3:9
- § The one who incites the persecution of faithful Christians – Revelation 2:10
- § The one who deceives the whole world – Revelation 12:9 & 20:10
- § The one who accuses Christians before God, night and day – Revelation 12:10
- § The one who is operative in this world, driven by fury and wrath – Revelation 12:12

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

The word 'satan' means *adversary; to attack, accuse, resist, withstand; properly, The Adversary of God*

§ The two key passages about him are *Isaiah 14:12-17* and *Ezekiel 28:11-19*

§ Both passages start out as an indictment against evil k*ings*, then shift to an indictment against the po*power* behind each of the evil king, and then back to the kings...

Isaiah 14:4-17 NKJV

Take up this proverb against the king of Babylon, and say:

"How the oppressor has ceased, the golden city ceased! 5 The LORD has broken the staff of the wicked, the scepter of the rulers; 6 He who struck the people in wrath with a continual stroke, he who ruled the nations in anger, is persecuted and no one hinders. 7 The whole earth is at rest and quiet; they break forth into singing. 8 Indeed the cypress trees rejoice over you, and the cedars of Lebanon, saying, 'Since you were cut down, no woodsman has come up against us.'

9 "Hell from beneath is excited about you, to meet you at your coming; it stirs up the dead for you, all the chief ones of the earth; It has raised up from their thrones all the kings of the nations. 10 They all shall speak and say to you: 'Have you also become as weak as we? Have you become like us? 11 Your pomp is brought down to Sheol, and the sound of your stringed instruments; the maggot is spread under you, and worms cover you.'

12 "How you are fallen from heaven, o Lucifer, son of the morning! How you are cut down to the ground, you who weakened the nations!

13 For you have said in your heart:

'I will ascend into heaven,
I will exalt my throne above the stars of God;
I will also sit on the mount of the congregation
On the farthest sides of the north;
14 I will ascend above the heights of the clouds,
I will be like the Most High.'

15 Yet you shall be brought down to Sheol, to the lowest depths of the Pit.

16 "Those who see you will gaze at you, and consider you, saying: 'Is this the man who made the earth tremble, who shook kingdoms, 17 who made the world as a wilderness and destroyed its cities, who did not open the house of his prisoners?'

§ The prophecy of Isaiah was written ~ *710BC*.

§ This king is *Nebuchadnezzar*, the oppressor; the 'golden city' is *Babylon*.

§ Both were brought to naught by *God*, leading to world-wide re*rejoicing* (v8).

§ v9-11 could apply to both *Nebuchadnezzar* and *Satan*; v12-15 absolutely apply to *Satan* while v16-17 may apply to both.

MSQ3: Who / what is stirred up in hell? Why?

The spirits of the wicked dead (chief ones = raphiim, (Rephaim?) the dead) held in the Place of Torments in Sheol, plus the angels who sinned held in Tartarus. They are all excited that the one who led them in revolt in heaven is now suffering the same fate as them! Revelation 20:1-3 details Satan's 1,000-year imprisonment.

v-11 – see Additional Notes – speculation – spooky

§ v12: fallen – *naphal fall; cast out root word of the Nephillim!*

§ heaven – *shamayim a DUAL, referring to the heavens, from which Satan was cast out from the 1st & 3rd heavens*

§ Lucifer - *heyel I use – translated Lucifer heyel ben shachar – son of morning; morning star*

MSQ4: What got Lucifer cast out of heaven?

Trying to usurp God's position, pridefully coveting what was God's and not his. The "I will" statements show his desire to be in control, not subject to anyone but himself...compare to the I AM statements of God and Christ

§ The sin of pride begins in the *heart*

MSQ5: What is the lowest depths of the pit?

Tartarus, the place reserved for the worst offenders, those kept in chains until the judgment – see MS5 – The Nephillim Conspiracy p58

§ v16: man - *iysh translated man or one/mighty one throughout Scripture, not 'adam, a male human (haaiysh vs. ha'adam)*

Ezekiel's was taken to Babylon in 605 BC; he was a prophet was from 593 BC to 571 BC; and a contemporary of Daniel and Jeremiah.

Ezekiel 28:11-99 NKJV

Moreover the word of the LORD came to me, saying, 12 "Son of man, take up a lamentation for the king of Tyre, and say to him, 'Thus says the Lord GOD: *Y God laments even over the failings of any person...*

"You were the seal of perfection, full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. 13 You were in Eden, the garden of God; every precious stone was your covering: the sardius, topaz, and diamond, beryl, onyx, and jasper, sapphire, turquoise, and emerald with gold. The workmanship of your timbrels and pipes was prepared for you on the day you were created.

14 "You were the anointed cherub who covers; I established you; you were on the holy mountain of God; you walked back and forth in the midst of fiery stones. 15 You were perfect in your ways from the day you were created, till iniquity was found in you.

16 "By the abundance of your trading You became filled with violence within, and you sinned; therefore I cast you as a profane thing Out of the mountain of God; and I destroyed you, O covering cherub, from the midst of the fiery stones.

17 "Your heart was lifted up because of your beauty; you corrupted your wisdom for the sake of your splendor; I cast you to the ground, I laid you before kings, that they might gaze at you.

18 "You defiled your sanctuaries by the multitude of your iniquities, by the iniquity of your trading; therefore I brought fire from your midst; It devoured you, and I turned you to ashes upon the earth In the sight of all who saw you. 19 All who knew you among the peoples are astonished at you; you have become a horror, and shall be no more forever."
Y we should keep this object lesson in mind when we start having our own "I wanna be God" sessions!

- § *UOT use consistently for a son of Adam*
- § son of man - a title for Ezekiel as a reminder that he is just a sinner in need of JC
- § seal of perfection - *Byou were the ultimate, the max, the most there was, #2 to God*
- § full of wisdom - *the most amount of wisdom , second to God*
- § perfect in beauty - *he set the platinum standard for beauty, not the Hollywood devil*
- § in Eden - *proves it could not be the king of Tyre!*
- § precious stones - *B attributes of light? All 9 stones - named are on the high priest breast-plate in Exodus 28 but in a different order*
- § timbrels and pipes - *for music? Unusual attribute of an angel; could signify his role as worship leader to direct (timbrels = tambourines) the worship to God*
- § were created *Y Satan was created, therefore not equal to God the Father, Son & Holy Spirit*
- § anointed cherub who covers - *not just a cherub, but the anointed cherub (thus over Michael & Gabriel) who covers - reference to reflecting God's light back*
- § holy mountain of God - *??? ref to 3rd heaven? Eden? ? stars; interstellar space? Could be a reference to the attributes of light*
- § fiery stones - *reference to the attributes of light*
- § till iniquity was found - *pride; trying to take over*
- § abundance of trading *B trafficking; in pride, which caused his heart to become evil, rebellious & violent enough to lead a revolt*
- § cast out as profane - *U what God had to do to Adam and Eve when they sinned in Eden*
- § destroyed you - *B just as a part of Adam died as a result of his sin, a part of Satan was destroyed for his*
- § v17-19 could apply to Satan & Prince of Tyre?
- § sin makes you s stupid and r rebellious
- MSQ6: How does God deal with prideful, sinful rebellion? When does all this happen to Satan?
- God makes an open spectacle to serve as an object lesson that He will not tolerate sinful, prideful rebellion. How often do we miss the signifacance of this lesson? If He took down the #2 with ease, how much more will he deal with us in our prideful, sinful rebellion?*
- He has already dealt with Satan in some areas, like being tossed out of heaven, losing his position there, becoming an object of scorn. Satan gets his final due when he gets tossed into Gehenna Hell at the GWTJ, nevermore to be seen...*

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

God is currently not through with dealing with Satan, as evidenced by Satan's role today. But there is a time coming when Satan will be completely dealt with...

Revelation 12:1-17 NKJV

Now a great sign appeared in heaven: a woman clothed with the sun, with the moon under her feet, and on her head a garland of twelve stars. 2 Then being with child, she cried out in labor and in pain to give birth.

3 And another sign appeared in heaven: behold, a great, fiery red dragon having seven heads and ten horns, and seven diadems on his heads. 4 His tail drew a third of the stars of heaven and threw them to the earth. And the dragon stood before the woman who was ready to give birth, to devour her Child as soon as it was born. 5 She bore a male Child who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron. And her Child was caught up to God and His throne. 6 Then the woman fled into the wilderness, where she has a place prepared by God, that they should feed her there one thousand two hundred and sixty days.

7 And war broke out in heaven: Michael and his angels fought with the dragon; and the dragon and his angels fought, 8 but they did not prevail, nor was a place found for them in heaven any longer. 9 So the great dragon was cast out, that serpent of old, called the Devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was cast to the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

10 Then I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, "Now salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of His Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren, who accused them before our God day and night, has been cast down. 11 And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony, and they did not love their lives to the death. 12 Therefore rejoice, O heavens, and you who dwell in them! Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and the sea! For the devil has come down to you, having great wrath, because he knows that he has a short time."

13 Now when the dragon saw that he had been cast to the earth, he persecuted the woman who gave birth to the male Child. 14 But the woman was given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness to her place, where she is nourished for a time and times and half a time, from the presence of the serpent. 15 So the serpent spewed water out of his mouth like a flood after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away by the flood. 16 But the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened its mouth and swallowed up the flood which the dragon had spewed out of his mouth. 17 And the dragon was enraged with the woman, and he went to make war with the rest of her offspring, who keep the commandments of God and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.

§ woman is Israel, about to birth Messiah

§ dragon is Satan, attempting to thwart

God's plan by killling Messiah as a babe

§ third of the stars = rebellling angels

§ male child is Jesus Christ

§ place in wilderness = Petra?

§ 1,260 days refers to 2nd half of Tribulation

MSQ7: How many heavens are there? List them.

1st heaven – the Earth's atmosphere "air"

2nd heaven – interstellar space

3rd heaven – God's sanctuary

MSQ8: When do/did the events of v7-9 occur?

I take this to mean post- Ezekiel 28 (cast out of 3rd heaven pre-current world) and thus here he is cast out of 2nd heaven, interstellar space, and confined to the planet. Another view is that heis home in 3rd heaven removed at Ezek 28, but he has access to 3rd heaven on a 'visitor pass' basis...

§ Satan is cast to Earth for 3.5 years, thereby cleansing interstellar space.

§ Satan's chief occupation prior to this (i.e.; during this present age) has been to:

§ accusing Christians as they sin;

§ deceiving the whole world to be in rebellion against God

§ He was overcome by:

past tense! The atoning sacrifice of Jesus' blood

MSQ9: What is his role during his remaining time on planet Earth?

take as may inhabitants of the planet with him to Gehenna hell – he seeks to make war on all Jews, because of their role in Jesus' return, and Christians, because they are believers, and takes anyone not on his team with him (Mark of the Beast becomes a priority)

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Let's take a look at the final chapter in the career of Satan...

Revelation 20:1-10 NKJV

Then I saw an angel coming down from heaven, having the key to the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. 2 He laid hold of the dragon, that serpent of old, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years; 3 and he cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal on him, so that he should deceive the nations no more till the thousand years were finished. But after these things he must be released for a little while.

4 And I saw thrones, and they sat on them, and judgment was committed to them. Then I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for their witness to Jesus and for the word of God, who had not worshiped the beast or his image, and had not received his mark on their foreheads or on their hands. And they lived and reigned with Christ for a thousand years. 5 But the rest of the dead did not live again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. 6 Blessed and holy is he who has part in the first resurrection. Over such the second death has no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years.

7 Now when the thousand years have expired, Satan will be released from his prison 8 and will go out to deceive the nations which are in the four corners of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle, whose number is as the sand of the sea. 9 They went up on the breadth of the earth and surrounded the camp of the saints and the beloved city. And fire came down from God out of heaven and devoured them. 10 The devil, who deceived them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone where the beast and the false prophet are. And they will be tormented day and night forever and ever.

Jesus

§ the 'angel' coming from heaven is _____ and he tosses Satan in the ab_____ *abyss* and seals it up for 1,000 years, which *eliminates* elim_____ his influence in the Millennium.

§ sin ~~€~~does / ~~€~~does not stop during this time, proving: *man does not need Satan to be sinning – it comes naturally as part of his sin nature*

MSQ10: Explain the 1st and 2nd resurrections.

§ *Categories, not events*
 § *The 1st – Jesus was the first, followed by believers at the Rapture, trib saints at the 2nd Coming and all OT saints, plus Millennium saints.*
 § *The 2nd is of the wicked dead at the GWTJ, where they will be judged and found wanting, and be thrown into the lake of fire*

MSQ11: How will Satan lead a rebellion? What is its final outcome and his outcome?

§ *Man will sin inwardly during the Millennium and be in outward compliance to God in order to avoid the swift punishment that outward rebellion will bring.*
 § *They are awaiting a leader – Satan – to come out and defy God, and they will join him in this rebellion*
 § *God crushes the rebellion at the end and tosses Satan into Gehenna hell, where they will be tormented forever*

MSQ12: Why does God continue to allow Satan to influence humanity, and why didn't God completely destroy Satan after he rebelled in heaven...wouldn't things be a whole lot better?

Good question

1. *it isn't because God cannot destroy Satan that He has not up to this point in our history*
2. *therefore God must have a purpose for Satan and is allowing him to be kept around*
3. *speculation: sine the Millennium is 'Satan-free' and sin continues to flourish, awaiting his release from the pit, to lead a final rebellion., God uses Satan as a tool to reveal the wicked hearts of people, and as an object lesson to us to avoid the final end of destruction prepared for Satan and his angels...*

The next time Satan accuses you of your past, remind him of his future!

- David Jeremiah

-----x x x x x x-----

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

17. Applying the Powerful Truths of 1 Peter 5



1 Peter 5:5-11 NKJV

Likewise you younger people, submit yourselves to your elders. Yes, all of you be submissive to one another, and be clothed with humility, for "God resists the proud, but gives grace to the humble."

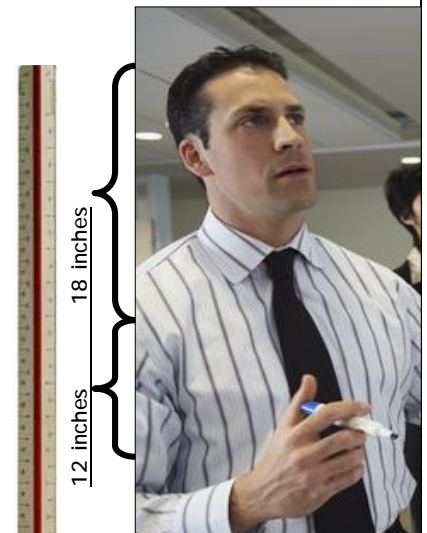
6 Therefore humble yourselves under the mighty hand of God, that He may exalt you in due time, 7 casting all your care upon Him, for He cares for you.

8 Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil walks about like a roaring lion, seeking whom he may devour. 9 Resist him, steadfast in the faith, knowing that the same sufferings are experienced by your brotherhood in the world. 10 But may the God of all grace, who called us to His eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after you have suffered a while, perfect, establish, strengthen, and settle you. 11 To Him be the glory and the dominion forever and ever. Amen.

Provocative Question to Ponder #1: Do I take control, or do I let God take control?

- § God, in His sove^{sovereignty}, decided to give every Christian the freedom to choose either:
- to take control himself and make his own ch^{choices} (and also suffer the cons^{consequences}) or
 - to hand that control right back to God by obe^{obediently} doing His will.
- § The characteristics of handing control back to God:
- sub^{submit} to the authorities he has placed me under, cheerfully and without complaint
 - clothing myself (I do this) with hum^{humility} and avoiding all pri^{prideful} behavior
When you think you have this one figured out, you ^{have already fallen into the trap of pride}
 - hum^{humble} myself before God ^{stop taking control, confess this as a sin and ask forgiveness}
 - cas^{casting} all my cares upon Christ, not trying to deal with them on my own
 - being sober, vigilant and aware that the devil desires me not to do this ^{Satan is smarter, stronger than me in my own strength, but not stronger than God!}
 - resi^{resist} the devil in faith (God supplies), knowing that if I do, he will flee
 - maintain an ete^{eternal} perspective of any present sufferings
- § Do I shove Him out of the way when I take control?
- "Move over God, you are sitting in ^{my} seat!"
- § Ultimately God is in control of eve^{everything}, including all outcomes, regardless of my choice.
- knowing this is not the same as ^{understanding} it.
 - understanding this is not the same as ^{applying} it.

The Longest Distance in the World?



The longest distance in the world is between your head (knowing) and your heart (understanding) and your hands (applying and doing).

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Provocative Question to Ponder #2: When I take control instead of listening to God, what voice do I listen to instead: the flesh (my Mr. Hyde), the world, or the devil?

Who Do You Listen To?	
GOD	THE WORLD THE FLESH THE DEVIL
	

§ All people have a clear ch~~oice~~^{oice} of which voice(s) to listen to.

Q1: In the passage below, circle the four different voices that you could choose to listen to:

Ephesians 2:1-3 NKJV

And you He made alive, who were dead in trespasses and sins, ~~2 in which you once walked according to the course of this world~~ according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit who now works in the sons of disobedience, ~~3 among whom also we all once conducted ourselves in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind, and were by nature children of wrath, just as the others.~~

§ When you choose to take control, you no longer listen to God

§ Not one person in the Bible ever ben~~efited~~^{efited} when they listened to the voice of Satan (Eve, Judas, Antichrist...)

Q2: So why do people persist in listening to him?

If deliberately, then the person has made a choice to reject God, and God allows the natural consequences of that choice. If out of ignorance, then Satan uses deception to keep the person in the dark. Ultimately people have a responsibility to determine the outcomes of listening to the wrong voice (Romans 1)

Q3: What specifically does it mean to 'listen to the voice of the world?'

The message of the world is under the control of its prince, Satan. Examples of how the world 'speaks:'

- § Advertising *ALL appeal to the lust of the flesh, eyes and pride of life*
- § Hollywood
- § The counsel of ungodly people
- §

§ Scripture indicates how the world, the flesh and Satan are all tied together and how their messages support and reinforce one another. Notice all four voices:

1 John 2:14-17 NKJV

Because you are strong, and the word of God abides in you, and you have overcome the wicked one. 15 Do not love the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. 16 For all that is in the world — the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life — is not of the Father but is of the world. 17 And the world is passing away, and the lust of it; but he who does the will of God abides forever.

The Jeckyl and Hyde Effect of the Flesh

§ Just as Satan and the world de~~ceive~~^{ceive}, so does the flesh.

§ Like the transfo~~rmation~~^{rmation} of Dr. Jeckyl into Mr. Hyde, our flesh feeds on it's sin nat~~ure~~^{ure}, which is screaming to get out and have its way...

James 1:13-15 NKJV

13 Let no one say when he is tempted, "I am tempted by God"; for God cannot be tempted by evil, nor does He Himself tempt anyone. 14 But each one is tempted when he is drawn away by his own desires and enticed. 15 Then, when desire has conceived, it gives birth to sin; and sin, when it is full-grown, brings forth death.

Dr. Jekyll or Mr. Hyde?		
		
Does the 'flesh' in you turn you into a real-life 'Mr. Hyde' while you sin?		

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Chained to a Dead Body

The Apostle Paul described the power of the flesh in his life as likened to being chained, back-to-back, to a dead body...

Romans 7:15-25 NKJV

For what I am doing, I do not understand. For what I will to do, that I do not practice; but what I hate, that I do. 16 If, then, I do what I will not to do, I agree with the law that it is good. 17 But now, it is no longer I who do it, but sin that dwells in me. 18 For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh) nothing good dwells; for to will is present with me, but how to perform what is good I do not find. 19 For the good that I will to do, I do not do; but the evil I will not to do, that I practice. 20 Now if I do what I will not to do, it is no longer I who do it, but sin that dwells in me.

21 I find then a law, that evil is present with me, the one who wills to do good. 22 For I delight in the law of God according to the inward man. 23 But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. 24 O wretched man that I am! Who will deliver me from this body of death? 25 I thank God — through Jesus Christ our Lord!

Q4: Is Paul suggesting that Christians are not responsible for sins caused by the flesh nature in every believer? How does a believer deal with the dynamic of the 'flesh' in their life?

Paul, in verse 15-20 describes the helplessness of trying to deal with this by one's own means – an impossible task for even the most mature Christian.

The answer is found in verses 21-25, where the only One who can deliver a believer from the body of death (the flesh) is Jesus Christ, who already has delivered us from the consequences of that death. It is by appropriating His power that we can be delivered moment by moment...and that means that we must learn to listen to His voice.

Ü this is the real problem...we are not listening (or don't want to listen)

God is Still Speaking...Maybe We Are Just Not Listening

Ezekiel 12:1-3 NKJV

Now the word of the LORD came to me, saying: 2 "Son of man, you dwell in the midst of a rebellious house, which has eyes to see but does not see, and ears to hear but does not hear; for they are a rebellious house. 3 "Therefore, son of man, prepare your belongings for captivity, and go into captivity by day in their sight. You shall go from your place into captivity to another place in their sight. It may be that they will consider, though they are a rebellious house.

Isaiah 6:8-10 NKJV

Also I heard the voice of the Lord, saying: "Whom shall I send, And who will go for Us?"

Then I said, "Here am I! Send me."

9 And He said, "Go, and tell this people: 'Keep on hearing, but do not understand; Keep on seeing, but do not perceive.' 10 "Make the heart of this people dull, And their ears heavy, And shut their eyes; Lest they see with their eyes, And hear with their ears, And understand with their heart, And return and be healed."



John 10:27-30 NKJV

27 My sheep hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow Me. 28 And I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish; neither shall anyone snatch them out of My hand.

Psalms 34:15 NKJV

The eyes of the LORD are on the righteous, and His ears are open to their cry.

Psalms 81:13-14 NKJV

"Oh, that My people would listen to Me, that Israel would walk in My ways! 14 I would soon subdue their enemies, and turn My hand against their adversaries.



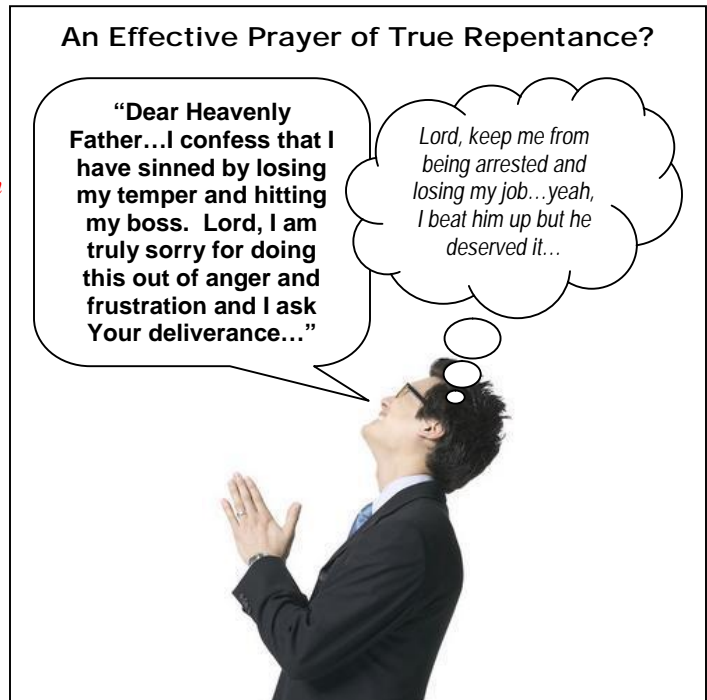
A method of torture employed by the Romans was to chain a prisoner to a dead body, back to back. Who could deliver the prisoner from this body of death?

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Provocative Question to Ponder #3: When I've taken control, and then sinned, is my prayer of repentance simply to have the consequences 'be gone' or do I repent of the step by step sins I committed, beginning with the decision to take control?

Q5: What does the depicted situation say about a common motive for prayer?

We try to get out of paying the price for the choices that we have made, and fail to stop and think through how we got there in the first place. Prayer like this can be desperately fervent, but we've already boud God's hands when we took matters into our own hands...

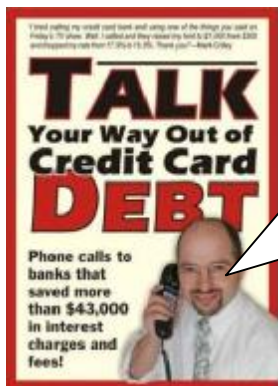


Q6: What role do harsh consequences play in the maturing process for a Christian?

The are there to get our attention to let us know that we are committing more sin than just taking the action that we did...because we fail to involve our Heavenly Father in the discussion that should have taken place, where we sought His advice and counsel of the Holy Spirit before we act. God uses these harsh consequences for our schooling...if we are open to learning the important lessons that He is trying to teach us...

A Few Facts to Consider:

- § Sin makes you s stupid because it ALWAYS dec deceives you into accepting a lie as 'truth.'
- § When I take control, Sa Satan is not re responsible for the bad ch choices I make
- § God is not res responsible for preventing my poor ch choices, either
- § God is not res responsible for getting me out of the cons consequences for my poor choices
- § God is not responsible for del delivering me from the res restitution that I will have to make to deal with each of the consequences of my bad decisions



"The real problem is these credit card companies with their fees and interest...now you don't have to be a victim anymore..."

Y discuss this 'myth'

- § Often the bad things that happen are the re result of taking co control and not being pat patient in bringing it to God to work through in His good time.
- § Our taking control shows that we do not t trust God, despite what our words may say to the contrary.
- § Mature Christians have learned to seek God's ad advice and co counsel before they act.

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Q7: True or False and Why: *A loving father will abandon his child to the consequences of their bad decisions.*

TRUE provided that we are discussing foolishness and not the ignorance of childishness

A parent is responsible to raise a child to think about the consequences of their actions before they act. As an older child who now has the mental capacity to think things through, sometimes the mistake has to be made in order to teach the lesson so that it “sticks.” God does not “leave us or forsake us” (i.e., abandon us) since He goes through the consequences with us, but He still abandons us to those consequences

Ûsince SIN MAKES YOU STUPID...Û



“Why didn’t either of you wake me up this morning? Thanks a lot for making me late for work.”

The Seven “Deadly Stupid Answers” to Sin When We’ve Taken Control

The answer we give:	What this really is:	Check-Up From the Neck-Up – Is this a problem for me?
“It wasn’t my fault...it was because someone-some situation-circumstances-etc.”	<i>Blame passing</i>	
“Yes it was sin, but I’ve prayed about it so now it’s OK.”	<i>Justifying</i>	
“It really didn’t hurt anybody...it’s no big deal.”	<i>Rationalizing</i>	
“Woe is me...I’ve had a hard life...bad things just come my way...it’s just not fair.”	<i>Victimization</i>	
“I didn’t know. How could I have known?”	<i>Ignorance</i>	
“You know, I felt God was leading me to do this {thing that I really, really wanted to do}...”	<i>Self-deception</i>	
“Maybe I acted hastily...but they deserved it, so I let ‘em have it!”	<i>Non-discernment & Impatience</i>	

HOMEWORK à

God’s Counsel to the Wise: How to Avoid Taking Control

Practical Actions	Helpful Scriptures	Tips, Techniques & What This Looks Like
Put on the whole armor of God	Ephesians 6:10-18 Romans 13:11-14 Ephesians 5:4-9	§ <i>You put it on every day</i> § <i>Requires education on the pieces and their purposes</i> § <i>God did not leave us ill-equipped</i>
Hand the sovereignty God gives you right back to Him	Proverbs 16:33 & 21:1 Luke 12:16-31 Psalm 91	§ <i>The only place I am safe is in the shadow of His wings</i> § <i>Since He is in control of all things, seek His will first and trust Him that He will take care of me</i>
Practice patience before acting	Proverbs 29:20 James 1:19-20 Ephesians 4:1-3	§ <i>Errors are compounded when we act in haste</i> §
Seek godly counsel from God and others; pray before acting	Psalm 5:1-3, 8 Proverbs 1:1-9 2 Chronicles 6:18-40	
Training yourself to listen for the small, still voice	I Kings 19:11-13 Psalm 107:23-32 Jeremiah 29:12-14	

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

God's Counsel to the Wise: How to Properly Deal With Sins Resulting From Our Taking Control

1 Corinthians 10:11-13 NKJV

All these things happened to them as examples, and they were written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the ages have come. 12 **Therefore let him who thinks he stands take heed lest he fall.** 13 No temptation has overtaken you except such as is common to man; but God is faithful, who will not allow you to be tempted beyond what you are able, but with the temptation will also make the way of escape, that you may be able to bear it.

*Ü **complacency is mistake 1!***

If God's chosen king could fall...and get restored after adultery, lying, deception, intrigue, murder and hypocrisy, then we can learn how God restores...

*Ü **Nathan took a huge risk!***



The Confrontation by Nathan:

2 Samuel 12:7-15 NKJV

Then Nathan said to David, "You are the man! Thus says the LORD God of Israel: 'I anointed you king over Israel, and I delivered you from the hand of Saul. 8 I gave you your master's house and your master's wives into your keeping, and gave you the house of Israel and Judah. And if that had been too little, I also would have given you much more!

9 Why have you despised the commandment of the LORD, to do evil in His sight? You have killed Uriah the Hittite with the sword; you have taken his wife to be your wife, and have killed him with the sword of the people of Ammon.

10 Now therefore, the sword shall never depart from your house, because you have despised Me, and have taken the wife of Uriah the Hittite to be your wife.' 11 Thus says the LORD: 'Behold, I will raise up adversity against you from your own house; and I will take your wives before your eyes and give them to your neighbor, and he shall lie with your wives in the sight of this sun. 12 For you did it secretly, but I will do this thing before all Israel, before the sun.'" 13 So David said to Nathan, "I have sinned against the LORD." And Nathan said to David, "The LORD also has put away your sin; you shall not die. 14 However, because by this deed you have given great occasion to the enemies of the LORD to blaspheme, the child also who is born to you shall surely die." 15 Then Nathan departed to his house.

Q8: When Nathan confronted David, what amount of time had elapsed between his first sin and the time of this event?

At least 9 months

Q9: What is God's purpose in having Nathan recite the history of David's sin? What were the sins, listed here and elsewhere?

>> Purpose: a forensic analysis to get David to think it through and realize just how heinous his actions were

§ *Not going to war with his troops in the spring*

§ *Loitering*

§ *Not being satisfied with what God had already given him (wives)*

§ *Giving Bathsheba a second look*

§ *Seduction*

§ *Adultery*

§ *Conspiracy*

§ *Murder*

§ *Cover-up and hypocrisy*

§ *Illegal marriage*

§ *Allowing God's name to be blasphemed*

Q10: What was David's response to Nathan's confrontation?

No excuses – a realization of his sins and a confession of what they all were, sins against God

Good pattern for us...avoid the SEVEN DEADLY STUPID answers

Q11: What specific consequences did God assign David? Why?

§ *A future of death that would affect David's family*

§ *Rebellion against David from within his own family*

§ *Adultery done to David*

§ *Public humiliation and discrediting*

§ *Death of an innocent child*

§ *Seeds for the split nation were planted*

Why: because there is always a price to pay for sin that must be paid, and the consequences of our own sin

David did not stop his "sonship," but his fellowship with God was broken, and the consequences were of monumental historical impact to the world

Provocative: innocent blood (the child) was shed for this sin!

Shortly after these events David wrote Psalm 51...a prayer from his crushed heart...

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Step 1: Recognition and Confession:

Psalm 51:1-6 NKJV

Have mercy upon me, O God, according to Your loving-kindness; according to the multitude of Your tender mercies, blot out my transgressions. 2 Wash me thoroughly from my iniquity, and cleanse me from my sin. 3 For I acknowledge my transgressions, and my sin is always before me. 4 Against You, You only, have I sinned, and done this evil in Your sight - that You may be found just when You speak, and blameless when You judge.

5 Behold, I was brought forth in iniquity, and in sin my mother conceived me.



no: whining, no rationalization, no 7 deadly stupid answers to stupid sin

§ No excexcuses offered – just a straightforward conconfession of sin

§ This is why God says not nothing bbad about David throughout Scripture!

Q11: What is the significance of “according to” in v1?

According to, not out of: if it were out of, it would be a piece of His love and compassion. Instead, according to an unlimited supply, what David is asking for is mercy according to God’s unlimited supply of unfailing love and great compassion

§ Blot out – *machah* *B blot out as in rubbing or smoothing over, as in folding a paper and smoothing it over*
ORIENTALISM: see Colossians 2:14; Isaiah 40:2

§ God had not fafailed David; just the opposite - David had fafailed God (as Nathan said)

§ David couldn’t clecleanse himself, he needed God to do it, and knew that he was sepseparated

from God until this was taken care of

§ Lesson: our work = confession, God’s = cleansing

§ Things that prevent God from doing His work:

- § *Not confessing* - *self-deception*
- § *Not submitting* - *trying to do it ourselves (works trip)*
- § *Pride (lack of humbling one’s self before God and others)*
- § *Stubbornness* - *lack of true repentance*

Q12: v3 – what is meant by “my sin is always before me?”

§ *David lived with his transgressionsSSSSSS, which were like an ever-increasing burden. Everywhere he looked he saw the ugliness of his sin.*

§ *BUT he kept it to himself and did not humble himself.*

§ *We have no record of additional sins that David committed during the time between him marrying Bathsheba and Nathan’s confrontation*

§ *Maybe David thought that by making an honest woman out of Bathsheba would somehow make things right... but nothing short of TRUE AND COMPLETE REPENTANCE would.*

Q13: David committed adultery, shamed a family, killed Uriah and deceived the nation. How can he say in v4 that his sin is only against God? Does his prayer stop short?

§ *All sin is against God first*

§ *All sin is seen immediately by God; nothing is hidden from his sight*

§ *Psalm 51 is a model of repentance to God; other Scriptures tell us how to reconcile to people*

Q14: Is David offering an excuse about being born sinful in v4? Is that just a *tiny* rationalization?

§ *Our sin problem starts at birth*

§ *Because it starts there, we become very practiced in sin before we learn a better way*

§ *But being sinful is no excuse for staying sinful*

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Step 2: Repentance of the Heart:

"To truly understand the repentance of David, we must savor each word of Psalm 51..."

Psalm 51:6-9 NKJV

6 Behold, You desire truth in the inward parts, and in the hidden part You will make me to know wisdom. 7 Purge me with hyssop, and I shall be clean; wash me, and I shall be whiter than snow. 8 Make me hear joy and gladness, that the bones You have broken may rejoice. 9 Hide Your face from my sins, and blot out all my iniquities.

- § v6: Sin rurules the heart unless God interdicts this natural process – only He can change it.
- § If we are wilwilling, He will crush us until we are ready to turn our heart over to Him
- § Turning our hearts over to Him is the only route to repentance; it is repentance
- § Once turned over to Him for change, truth takes root in the heheart and radiates into our lives
- § v7: Hyssop – *'ezobh; husspos,; A plant used for ritual cleansing purposes; a humble plant springing out of the wall (1 Kings 4:33), the extreme contrast to the cedar.*

Q15: What is our part in the cleaning process? God's part? What happens if we confuse the two?

*We have to recognize our dirtiness and ask God's forgiveness as I John 1:9 says
The miracle is that he does the hard part, the cleaning
We receive spiritual dialysis through His Word
We only try in vain to cleanse ourselves
David knew this – hear the pain of his heart as he calls out in verses 7-8*

*I John 1:9:1
If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.*

- § v8: broken – *dakah To collapse, physically or mentally; root word suggests a crushing, bruising, affliction, pressing with great weight, destroy, smite, break into pieces, humble*
- § rejoice - *taageelnah to spin around under the influence of a violent emotion; rejoice, a revolution of joy*

Q16: What was God doing with David during the series of sinful acts on his part, according to verse 8? How does this tie in to the process of David's repentance from those sins?

Clearly God was giving David no peace since he began the process of seducing Bathsheba.

- § *When we are in a state of sin, deception and denial, like David was, it felt to him like his bones were being crushed.*
- § *For the 9 months or so that his sin was 'hidden' from people, he had to live with an ever increasing weight that slowly crushed him.*
- § *But there is joy and gladness when that weight is finally lifted from us!*
- § *a Christian asks for repentance, their sins are no longer held against them. The blood of Christ already paid the price for the sin itself.*
- § *That is why all sin is truly against God - - because he paid for it with the life of His Son*

- § v9: David asks God to perform two parts of his cleansing of David:
 - hide (cathar - to hide by covering over) His face from David's sin (*chet'* - a crime + it's pepenalty)
 - to blot out (*machah*) ALL his iniquities (*'avon* - pervperversity and moral evil).



David applies I John 1:9!

David clearly knew true forgiveness, as he later wrote:

Psalm 103:11-12 NKJV – A Psalm of David)

Two ends never meet!

11 For as the heavens are high above the earth, so great is His mercy toward those who fear Him; 12 As far as the east is from the west, so far has He removed our transgressions from us.

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Step 3: Restoration By God:

Psalm 51:10-12 NKJV

10 Create in me a clean heart, O God, and renew a steadfast spirit within me. 11 Do not cast me away from Your presence, and do not take Your Holy Spirit from me. 12 Restore to me the joy of Your salvation, and uphold me by Your generous Spirit.

- § Unlike when you took co control and went out, got in trouble and sinned, God expects to be your le leading partner in the process of res restoration.
- § The only way to stay out of repe repetitive sin is to fully and completely re remove yourself from the influences that led you there in the first place.
- § Restoration includes making res restitution for what we have done AND seeking the for forgiveness from those whom we have injured (there are NO VICTIMLESS CRIMES!)
- § This may or may not happen, but you need to make restitution, seek forgiveness, and let it go

Who's Fooling Who?



"I'm so much better now that I'm out of rehab...I can handle it!"

§ Steadfast spirit - *letting the Holy Spirit be in charge and not you*

Q17: Why ask God to give us strength for the task instead of removing the temptation from us?

Because is He removed it from us, we would not need to stay close to Him! And we'd be right back into something else that our willful hearts led us into. This is another trick of Satan, to get you out from under His protection where you will be vulnerable to the influence of sin...

§ A wi willful heart that isn't wi willing to submit to God leads us right back to repeat our sins, but only worse the next time around.

Q18: Explain v11 from both Old and New Testament perspective.

- § *In the OT, God's covenant with those whom He called was to place His spirit ON them, not in them, like He's been doing for all who confess Jesus Christ as their Lord and Savior since the day of Pentecost.*
- § *God never casts us away from His presence - - - we choose to walk away, which is how we get into trouble.*

Q19: What does David ask God for as part of his restoration, and why is it a key part of the restoration?

- § *Remember the joy of first being saved? When we forget to dwell in the light of that joy and the fellowship with God that comes from daily reading of His Word, contemplating His promises, praying to Him - - - the joy doesn't fade - - - we just walk away from it, so it loses its glow from the distance*
- § *God and God alone can --- and will --- grant a willing spirit, if that is what we truly want.*
- § *If we accept His chastening with a rebellious heart, we'll never have that joy*
- § *Satan will see us rebelling and attempt to substitute a fake, worldly happiness that misleads us as it entices us*

Û a reminder that our taking control does not lead to anything good...

There is a way that seems right to a man, but in the end it leads to death – Proverbs 14:12 & 16:25

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Step 4: Response, Reformation and Responsibility:

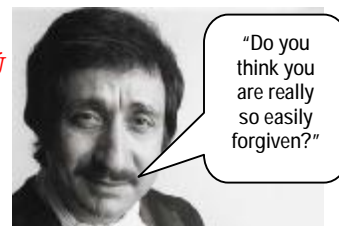
Psalm 51:13-19 NKJV

13 Then I will teach transgressors Your ways, and sinners shall be converted to You. 14 Deliver me from the guilt of bloodshed, O God, the God of my salvation, and my tongue shall sing aloud of Your righteousness. 15 O Lord, open my lips, and my mouth shall show forth Your praise.

16 For You do not desire sacrifice, or else I would give it; You do not delight in burnt offering. 17 The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit, a broken and a contrite heart - these, O God, You will not despise.

18 Do good in Your good pleasure to Zion; build the walls of Jerusalem. 19 Then You shall be pleased with the sacrifices of righteousness, with burnt offering and whole burnt offering; then they shall offer bulls on Your altar.

- § True repentance involves refo_____ *reformation*. This is what people are to see in us:
- bro_____ *brokenness* and the subsequent deliverance over the sin that only God can give
 - vuln_____ *vulnerability*, a willingness to openly talk about our deliverance to others
 - a living mes_____ *message* of hope and enco_____ *encouragement* for others who are similarly struggling
Ū true change is rare...most return to their old ways
 - a true ch_____ *change* in our behavior, no longer living the same way as before
Ū our wordless testimony speaks loudest of all – those who know what you’ve been through will be convicted
- § Key question: In us, do people see the real deal, or do they see just a path that leads to death?
Ū if you are a Christian, then you’ve taken His name...
You shall not take the Lord’s name in vain Have you done this?
- § Watch out! Satan will try to lay a _____ *guilt trip on you – maybe through others* Ū
- § Only the rede_____ *redeemed* can sing and share this kind of testimony
- § Remember, it is all about _____ *God* and not about _____ *you*



Q20: How do you reconcile the fact that God went to extraordinary lengths to establish extremely detailed and specific instructions for sacrifices to Him (guilt offering, sin offering, heave offering, etc. outlined in Exodus, Deuteronomy and Leviticus), with verses 16-17?

People can make sacrifices to God for a variety of reasons, many of which are done with impure hearts – out of obligation, thinking that if I do this, then He must do that, out of a guilty conscience, to please others, etc.

God wants in us the REAL DEAL. The reason why God went to extraordinary lengths to have people go through an exacting sacrifice is that all during the preparation, the individual was to think about what they had done and the high price paid for their sins to be forgiven. When we just go through the motions and do not have true repentance, we are an affront to God, and He is angrier with us than when we sinned in the first place.

True humility, repentance, and reformation is what God wants – and deserves...

God does not bring us safely through such trials to make a mockery out of His forgiveness

Q21: v18-19: David's prayer in Psalm 51 ends with a petition for blessing and instructions for making offerings. How do these verse apply to our making offerings to God today?

Note that David says that God is pleased with the sacrifices of righteousness, meaning made by people who first have gotten themselves right before a Holy God through this process of recognition, repentance, and restoration, and then are deemed righteous when they make an offering. This pleases God, who is pleased to accept such and offering!

How can we go through this preparation process when we run late on a Sunday morning, and then expect God to be pleased with our offerings of song, praise and tithes?

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

18. Keeping Good Company

1 Peter 5:12-14 NKJV

By Silvanus, our faithful brother as I consider him, I have written to you briefly, exhorting and testifying that this is the true grace of God in which you stand. 13 She who is in Babylon, elect together with you, greets you; and so does Mark my son. 14 Greet one another with a kiss of love. Peace to you all who are in Christ Jesus. Amen.



§ Silvanus - is also known as Silas, meaning knowing or asked

§ May have been the same as Paul's early missionary companion

Silvanus was a very common name – He may have also

§ Was Peter's amanuensis, or secretary *delivered the letter to the churches indicated in 1 Peter 1:1*

§ 'She who is in Babylon' – refers to a church (elected together with you)

three possibilities: 1) the Nestorian Church which was located at Babylon; 2) the church at New Babylon in Egypt, near present day Cairo (a view held by the Coptic Church, i.e.; Egyptian Christians), or 3) a code word for Rome)

§ Mark my son – is John Mark, which means John = grace of our Lord; Mark = shining or polite

The same John Mark that accompanied Paul and Barnabas in their early journeys, who later wrote the Gospel of Mark under Peter's direction!

§ This is a picture of fellowship and keeping good company! *note their names*

§ Keeping company means intimate fellowship with someone, a like-mindedness in our beliefs and actions

but it does not mean to isolate ourselves from non-believers...in fact, we are to be in but not of the world

We as believers need a support system of folks who will model right behavior and habits, and who will keep us accountable for living our lives as God has intended.

Q1: Why is keeping good company so important to our walk as Christians?

Peter hung out with people whose names and descriptions meant: knowing, faithful, brother, exhorter, testifier, elect, grace of our Lord, shining, polite...all things to reinforce our walk!

Q2: What additional light do the following verses shed on the importance of keeping good company?

1 Cor inthians15:33 NKJV

Do not be deceived: "Evil company corrupts good habits."

§ *We are corrupted by bad company because we will pick up their habits*

§ *Notice that good company does not reform evil company!*

2 Thessalonians 3:13 NKJV

And if anyone does not obey our word in this epistle, note that person and do not keep company with him, that he may be ashamed.

§ *Ū suggests that you've approached this brother according to Matthew 15:18-20 and he's refused correction, so you need to no longer keep company with him*

1 Corinthians 5:9-11 NKJV

I wrote to you in my epistle not to keep company with sexually immoral people. 10 Yet I certainly did not mean with the sexually immoral people of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or idolaters, since then you would need to go out of the world. 11 But now I have written to you not to keep company with anyone named a brother, who is sexually immoral, or covetous, or an idolater, or a reviler, or a drunkard, or an extortioner — not even to eat with such a person.

§ *It is OK to keep company with unbelieving pagans but do not do as they do, in order to be a witness and to draw them to Christ.*

§ *Specifically, we are to not keep company with FELLOW BELIEVERS who are living a pagan lifestyle*

Q3: In verse 12, what is meant by the term "true grace" and what is its importance in our walk?

True Grace is the theme of 1 Peter, to show us how to stand during our hour of trial. This true grace is what is to be reflected in our lives, in our walk and in our actions. This true grace should be what draws others to Christ, when they see the emptiness of the world's fake grace compared to a victorious Christian delivered and standing firm!

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Not much time elapsed between I Peter and II Peter...

Written shortly after his first letter (as also Paul to Corinth, Thessalonika, and Timothy).

Probably after Paul's death, somewhere between A.D. 64 - 68. Peter mentions "all his epistles" as being in circulation already.

This epistle has had a rough passage through the centuries. It was considered second-class Scripture by Luther, rejected by Erasmus, and regarded with hesitancy by Calvin. Despite some scholastic controversies (which we won't bother to detail) by the 4th century it was well accepted throughout most of the world.



[In Cave 7 at Qumran, a papyrus fragment 7Q5, appears to be part of Mark's Gospel, comprising 6:52-53. A tiny fragment (only 2 centimeters) 7Q10, found in the same cave has on it 6 letters in two lines which could come only from 2 Peter 1:15 if they come from the NT at all. [Jose O'Callaghan, "Los papiros griegos de la cueva 7 de Qumran," Madrid, *Biblioteca de Autores Cristianos*, 1974, pp. 74-75, plate v.] It has been conjectured that this letter might have been a covering document to Mark's Gospel to the Qumran community shortly before the Jewish War in A.D. 68 when the cave was closed.] Like all "2nd" epistles, it is corrective: it is the prophet or exhorter who speaks. In his final message just prior to his martyrdom, Peter gives us some specific warnings concerning the oncoming apostasy that will sweep over Christendom.

The two epistles were linked to the two great experiences of his life:

- § The declaration of the building of the Church (Matthew 16).
- § The Transfiguration.

- Chuck Missler

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

19. A Symphony of Grace

2 Peter 1:1-11 NKJV

Simon Peter, a bondservant and apostle of Jesus Christ, to those who have obtained like precious faith with us by the righteousness of our God and Savior Jesus Christ: 2 Grace and peace be multiplied to you in the knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord, 3 as His divine power has given to us all things that pertain to life and godliness, through the knowledge of Him who called us by glory and virtue, 4 by which have been given to us exceedingly great and precious promises, that through these you may be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust. 5 But also for this very reason, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue, to virtue knowledge, 6 to knowledge self-control, to self-control perseverance, to perseverance godliness, 7 to godliness brotherly kindness, and to brotherly kindness love. 8 For if these things are yours and abound, you will be neither barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. 9 For he who lacks these things is shortsighted, even to blindness, and has forgotten that he was cleansed from his old sins. 10 Therefore, brethren, be even more diligent to make your call and election sure, for if you do these things you will never stumble; 11 for so an entrance will be supplied to you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.



Just as an orchestra is known for the symphonic quality of its music, so a mature believer is known for the symphony of qualities lived out in their lives empowered by grace.

Q1: In verse 1, what evidence does Peter provide to disprove the notion that apostles were somehow better than 'regular old believers'?

Three pieces of evidence:

1. ***He calls himself a bondservant, or doulos, one who willingly remained a servant after the 7 years of service, under the household of the master – use of an awl to pierce his ear – not a common slave but a doulos! And he calls himself a doulos first, before taking the title of apostle.***
2. ***He states that the same faith (“Like, precious faith”) that saved him, an apostle, also saved all believers, thus apostles are not some kind of super-faith super-believers. This faith is of equal honor and privilege to that of the apostles...or any other believer!***
3. ***He points out that God’s righteousness was what got the job done, nothing that he brought to the party. Peter was a sinner like us – remember his early life as a disciple? He lost his discipleship!***

If Peter was the first Pope, he sure did not know it!

§ Grace (*charis*) and peace (H: *shalom*) ***The twins, Greek and Hebrew, peace always follows grace***

§ be multiplied (*plethuno*) - ***plethora, an abounding – Peter uses mathematical terms “added to” “multiplied”***

Q2: According to verses 2-4, what are the end results that knowledge about God the Father and Jesus Christ ought to produce as a believer matures? Why should a believer be confident of these end results?

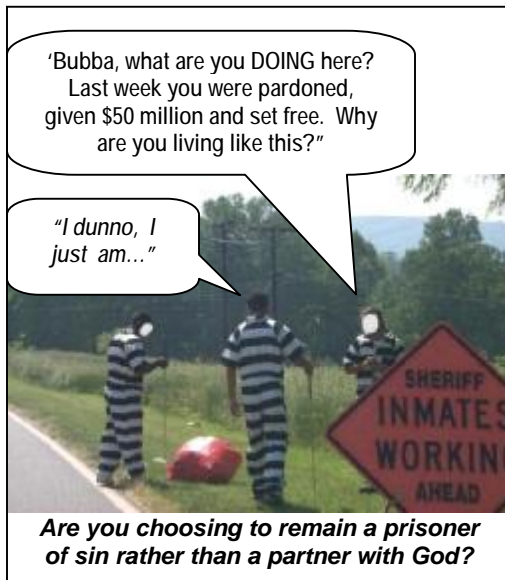
the answer is like the building of a symphony, one instrument layered upon another

- § ***The outward manifestation of grace and peace. This ought to be clear to the rest of the world that we are different, not a macho “I’ve got it all together” but an unflappable grace and peace that can sustain us through trials and difficulties, even tragedies***
- § ***Because He has provided to a believer ALL THINGS that pertain to life and godliness, we ought to be able to walk confidently.***
- § ***The confidence comes because it is not according to what we have done, but according to His divine power that all things have been provided...and His divine power is certainly at a much higher level than anything that I could do***
- § ***Not only is the source unlimited, but the promises are not promises, not great promises, but EXCEEDINGLY GREAT and PRECIOUS promises, as good as the fidelity of the guarantor, God Himself. Look at how the symphony builds!***
- § ***Verse 4 says we are partners with God in His holy and divine nature, and thus we as believers can share in the victory of Christ over sin and death, and no longer have to live as spiritual paupers, but partners in the most successful and rich enterprise ever in the history of history.***
- § ***Our escape from worldly things is already accomplished, we just aren’t living like it!***

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

2 Peter 1:4 NKJV

...by which have been given to us exceedingly great and precious promises, that through these you may be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.



- § partakers - *koinonos* - **sharer, partner, companion in suggests a full partnership...**
Β theos - divine or godlike
- § divine nature - *theos phusis* - *Û phusis - natural production*
Û suggests a natural growing towards Christlikeness
- § escaped - *apopheugo* **past tense of having escaped**
Û pronounced "up off you go"

The promises that Peter is referring to:

- § the new bi birth (1 Peter 1:3),
- § God's pro protecting power (1 Peter 1:5),
- § God's enabling po power (2 Peter 1:3)
- § Romans 8:28-39 **READ THIS**
- § Make a list of God's promises *ÛÛ*
While not commanded in this passage, a good exercise



Q3: Why do some Christians chose to live life as spiritual paupers, in a non-abundant life?

Good discussion question - list answers on board

They boil down to ignorance or a lack of trust of God that these things are indeed true

A SURE MARK OF A MATURING CHRISTIAN IS THAT S/HE BEGINS LIVING UP TO THE LEVEL THAT CHRIST HAS ALREADY MADE AVAILABLE!

Û verse 4b

- § corruption - *phthora* **FTHOR-A decay,**
- § lust - *epithumia* **a longing for something, especially what is forbidden, sometimes to the point of obsession**

Q4: Agree or disagree and why: Satan uses the instant gratification 'need' of people today as one of his primary agents in enslaving people to 'lust.'

Good discussion point...

TRUE - today's society is all about instant gratification. We've gotten to the point where we go into massive debt because we think we are entitled to a better lifestyle than our parents; we nuke the coffee, eat fast food, have faster and faster PCs, want instant access through cable tv, cell phones, instant messenger, etc.

How much is driven thorough the so-called 'slice of life commercials that are the staple of Madison Avenue? Since Satan is the god of this world and has the media under his control, we have been subtly brain-washed into believing most of the myths we see portrayed in print, radio and tv/movies?

As long as people think that they are somehow exempt from personal accountability, Satan will continue to use lust for wrong things to keep us enslaved.



Û Is Cathy so focused on a quick fix that she sees no value in the steps to get out of debt. Or will she blame the credit card companies for getting Her into debt?

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

2 Peter 1:5-8 NKJV

But also for this very reason, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue, to virtue knowledge, 6 to knowledge self-control, to self-control perseverance, to perseverance godliness, 7 to godliness brotherly kindness, and to brotherly kindness love.



Q5: In the passage above, what is God's work and what is ours?

This point illustrates the PARTNERSHIP where each partner supplies assets
 § *Immature believers try to do God's work and expect Him to do their work!*

God's work:

§ *For this very reason – what reason? The exceedingly great and precious promises of God (given in verse 4).*

§ *Faith – pistis – even this is given by God as the foundation upon which we are to build. Eph 2:8; Rom 12:3,*

§ *Knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ – another gift from God; the Scriptures*

Our work:

§ *(Giving) all diligence – pous spoude - all manner of speed, haste, earnestness, eagerness, businesslike-ness*

§ *add to – epichoregesante –2 words derived from this in English: “chorus” and “choreograph” add to is the imperative form of this (i.e.; do without question) in ancient Greece, the state established a chorus, but the director of the chorus (the choregys, paid all of the expenses of training the chorus. The word came to be used of one who provides for or supports others, or supplies something for them in abundance. Thus a believer is to abundantly supply all of the characteristics listed.*

CHARACTERISTICS OF A MATURE CHRISTIAN

Characteristic	Meaning of the Characteristic	How I See This Lived Out in My Life
Faith	<i>pstis – faith, assurance, belief in, reliance upon Christ for salvation</i>	
Virtue	<i>arête – valor, excellence; as in a soldier</i>	
Knowledge	<i>gnosis – a deepening understanding of spiritual realities</i>	
Self-Control	<i>egkratia – to have one's passions under firm control</i>	
Perseverance	<i>hupomone – enduring, patient, doing without complaining (grumbling)</i>	
Godliness	<i>eusebia – Christ-likeness, true piety lived out in a person's life</i>	
Brotherly Kindness	<i>philadelphia – brotherly affection towards fellow-believers</i>	
Love	<i>agape – deep, sacrificial love (like that of Christ willingly giving up His life for us)</i>	

Q6: In what ways do each of these characteristics build upon the foundation of the previous one?

§ *On a foundation of FAITH, supplied by God, we are told to go out and be effective soldiers in the spiritual battle around us.*

§ *As a good soldier, we arm ourselves for the battle with the Word of God, which allows us to understand the discipline and self-control required to engage in the battle and persevere*

§ *As we persevere, we begin to take on more and more Christ-like qualities, which have the effect of seeing fellow believers as true brothers, and to take on the same qualities of sacrificial love that Christ took on for us*



1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

One River, Two Seas

The Jordan River feeds both seas...one abounds while the other is barren.

2 Peter 1:8-11

For if these things are yours and abound, you will be neither barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. 9 For he who lacks these things is shortsighted, even to blindness, and has forgotten that he was cleansed from his old sins. 10 Therefore, brethren, be even more diligent to make your call and election sure, for if you do these things you will never stumble; 11 for so an entrance will be supplied to you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.

Q7: What does the difference between an abundant life and a barren life come down to, according to this passage?

God gives each believer a little bit (faith) to see what he or she will build out of it. When the believer 'forgets - v9' that s/he has ALREADY received these things, then their life will be barren. (STANDING ON A HOSE, complaining about no water). But the one who BELIEVES GOD and TRUSTS HIM that what He says is true, live out an abundant life!

§ blindness - myopazon - myopic; cannot discern spiritual things
DOING SOMETHING with what you have been given allows God to do more.

Read Matthew 25:14-30 - God expects a return on His investment!

Û See of Galilee area is 3rd largest exporter of fruit & vegetables IN THE WORLD!

Do you practice the "Three R's?"

R Receive - receive God's truth with eagerness

R Retain- allow it to permeate your very being and change your thoughts (Rom 12:1-2)

R Release - serve, give, live it out

§ diligent - spoudazo *making all due speed or haste to accomplish this; this is a fiduciary term used by a steward; ie, a warranty deed*

§ the de deeds of a believer ought to dem demonstrate the fidelity of the guarantee and guarantor

§ guarantee = that we have been saved once for all time

§ guarantor = God Himself

§ call - klesis *an invitation (we had to accept Christ's invitation to salvation)*

§ election - ekloge *diving selection by God who desires all men to be saved 1 Tim 2:4*

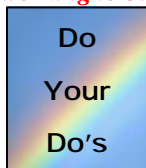
§ sure - bebaian *firm, steadfast, held in place by force, secure, guaranteed*

Q8: Explain verses 10 and 11.

As a Christian, given all of the things that God has supplied, and an understanding of my work and His work, I need to work diligently - as a steward, remember Matthew 25:14-30 - to steadfastly demonstrate the inward reality of my salvation!

This is a call to live worthy of my salvation!

God is the one who supplies an abundant entrance into His kingdom if I will hard at what He tells me to do. He promises me not to stumble (ptaiseite, to trip up or experience a reversal). This is a promise that one who is diligently working to build all of the characteristics will not trip up in his or her walk so frequently or easily as one who is spiritually immature or blind. Eternity is at stake!



A Lack of Diligence

How our lack of diligence shuts off God's blessings.

God's goal for your life: constant victory

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

20. Finishing Well

One of the challenges we face as human beings is growing older – things don't work as well as they did when we were younger; health fails, minds are no longer laser-sharp...yet God tells us in Scripture that some of the greatest work of our lives is accomplished towards the end of our lives...

2 Peter 1:12-14 NKJV

For this reason I will not be negligent to remind you always of these things, though you know and are established in the present truth. 13 Yes, I think it is right, as long as I am in this tent, to stir you up by reminding you, 14 knowing that shortly I must put off my tent, just as our Lord Jesus Christ showed me. 15 Moreover I will be careful to ensure that you always have a reminder of these things after my decease.

Ū 75 must have seemed like 100 by today's standards

§ At the time of writing 2 Peter, Peter was approaching age 75 and his own dedeath may have well been on his mind as he wrote (~ 67 AD)

Q1: What was Peter's heartbeat for his readers, according to verse 12-13?

Peter wants to keep reminding them of the things that he has just told them earlier in his second epistle:

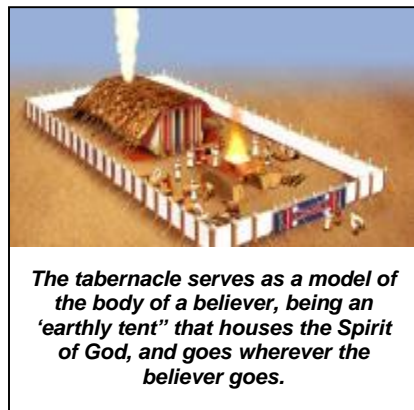
- § *God gives us precious promises to be believed*
- § *We ought to trust Him and live them out*
- § *What a mature Christian is like (qualities/characteristics)*

He tries to distill all of the elements of growing up and becoming a mature Christian into the characteristics given in his 'symphony of grace' so that the believers would both KNOW and BE ESTABLISHED

§ know – eidotas (eidon) *-to know thoroughly, are sure of, experiential knowledge*

ginosko to be aware of, perceive, understand

§ are established – esteerigmenous *to set fast, turn and stabilize in a specific and firm direction*



The tabernacle serves as a model of the body of a believer, being an 'earthly tent' that houses the Spirit of God, and goes wherever the believer goes.

§ tent – skenoma *tabernacle, temporary dwelling place for the Spirit of God*

§ Peter recognized that all believers (new and mamature alike) need to be remreminding to make their calling and election sure.

§ Peter states that he will "not be negnegligent" in this duty.

§ Peter uses the illustration of the tatabernacle as a model of the temtemporary dwelling place of the Holy Spirit, which moved from place to place while the Jews served as pilpilgrims wandering in a place that was not their hohome.

§ My decease - exodon *same word as is used for the Book of Exodus!*

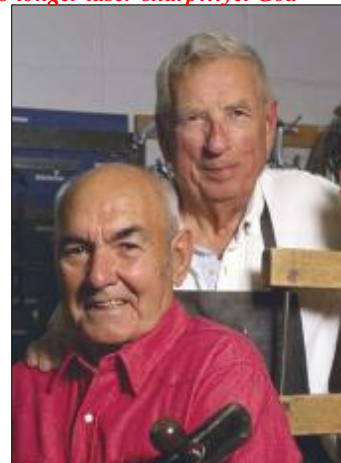
§ *Finishing well* for Peter was writing the gospel of Mark and the two epistles that bear his name in order to sstir uup fellow believers so that after his ddeath they would have practical direction on how to ggrow uup.

John 21:18-19 NKJV

Most assuredly, I say to you, when you were younger, you girded yourself and walked where you wished; but when you are old, you will stretch out your hands, and another will gird you and carry you where you do not wish." 19 This He spoke, signifying by what death he would glorify God. And when He had spoken this, He said to him, "Follow Me."

Q2: Using John 21:18-19 as a source text, what did Peter know about his death?

- *That he would die as an old man*
- *That he would die in captivity*
- *That he would be executed by crucifixion (stretch out your hands)*
- *That even in his death, he would finish well by glorifying God*



1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

The tradition is that Peter died a martyr at Rome about 67 AD, when about 75 years old. His Lord and Master had predicted a violent death for him (John 21:18-19), which it is thought came to pass by crucifixion under Nero. It is said that at his own desire he was crucified head downward, feeling himself unworthy to resemble his Master in his death. *from the International Standard Bible Encyclopedia*

Q3: Based on your answer to Q2, what evidence do you have that Peter spent his final days feeling sorry for himself, in retirement, taking it easy, etc?

Absolutely no evidence; in fact, he seemed to get more purposeful in getting done what he wanted to get done as a race against the clock! His eye was on the finish line at an age (75) when most folks want to be so retired in Florida...

Q4: How many weekends of life do you have left before you will likely die (assume old age)?

Personal exercise... give 10-15 minutes to first PRAY about it, then think about it

Q5: Look at the recorded life of Peter and see how much you personally can identify with it. What specific goals do you want to achieve in your remaining weekends?

Personal exercise...

Because Peter serves as a model for us – a rash, impulsive adult who failed in his early ministry duties, was gripped by the Holy Spirit and served faithfully in the early church until the time of his death -



Homework – Search the Scriptures to find out how these folks finished and note their accomplishments after age 65.

Abraham and Sarah -
Caleb -
Anna -
Simeon -
Paul -

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*



21. I Remember it Like it Was Yesterday

2 Peter 1:16-18 NKJV

For we did not follow cunningly devised fables when we made known to you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eyewitnesses of His majesty. 17 For He received from God the Father honor and glory when such a voice came to Him from the Excellent Glory: "This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased." 18 And we heard this voice which came from heaven when we were with Him on the holy mountain.

§ Peter is referring to an event he personally witnessed more than 35 years previously, where he saw *Jesus, Moses and Elijah on the Mount of Transfiguration*

§ A Christian relies on his *historical* f *facts* corroborated by ey *eyewitnesses*, not fables (*mythios*) or cleverly devised stories, as most world religions do

Q1: What two incredibly powerful avenues of revelation has God provided us, according to:

- a. Psalm 19:7-11 *God's Word, the Logos*
- b. John 1:18 and Hebrews 1:2 *Jesus Christ, the Logos*

Ü both are together in one verse; two examples...and Jesus testifies in Ps 40 (again in Heb 5:39) that the Bible is His story

John 5:39 - You search the Scriptures, for in them you think you have eternal life; and these are they which testify of Me. NKJV

Psalm 40:7-8 Then said I, Lo, I come: in the volume of the book it is written of me, 8 I delight to do thy will, O my God: yea, thy law is within my heart. KJV

Have you ever had an event, a memory so vivid, that it defined a moment of decision in your life? Consider the impact of the Transfiguration on Peter...after 35+ years it still haunted him...

Matthew 17:1-9 NKJV

Now after six days Jesus took Peter, James, and John his brother, led them up on a high mountain by themselves; 2 and He was transfigured before them. His face shone like the sun, and His clothes became as white as the light. 3 And behold, Moses and Elijah appeared to them, talking with Him. 4 Then Peter answered and said to Jesus, "Lord, it is good for us to be here; if You wish, let us make here three tabernacles: one for You, one for Moses, and one for Elijah."

5 While he was still speaking, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them; and suddenly a voice came out of the cloud, saying, "This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. Hear Him!" 6 And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their faces and were greatly afraid. 7 But Jesus came and touched them and said, "Arise, and do not be afraid." 8 When they had lifted up their eyes, they saw no one but Jesus only.

9 Now as they came down from the mountain, Jesus commanded them, saying, "Tell the vision to no one until the Son of Man is risen from the dead."

§ *Many competent scholars view this as a Pre-Trib staff meeting; they believe that Elijah and Moses are the Two Witnesses of Revelation 11*

§ *Make three tabernacles – “booths” echoes of Sukkoth, the festival of booths? (why do we have memorial-type holidays? TO REMEMBER! ...instead, it is all about US, which is not a mature attitude for a Christian!*

- *Peter refers to Jesus' Second coming on I Peter 1:5, 1:13, and 4:13 and again here...we need to keep remembering and he preached on the Second Coming in Acts 2:32-33, 36; 3:16, 20-21*

Why does Peter continue to focus on the S *Second* C *Coming* So that we would bring this to mind and CHANGE our im *immature* behavior to mature, and build a DISCIPLINE of fol *following* God's revealed Word: Scripture and Christ, to the goal of becoming more like *Christ*.

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Q2: What does having a first-hand experience with something allow you to do, in terms of offering a credible defense or argument?

When an eyewitness testifies about something, and the credibility of that eyewitness is established, it is almost impossible to ignore their testimony. Most legal systems in the world operate on this principal: the testimony of a credible eyewitness is the highest form of proof, because they are relating facts as they have been seen



Ü our ability to be credible eyewitnesses of God’s power requires us to carefully examine what He has done in the milestone events of our lives... Ü

Exercise: Spiritual Milestones in My Life

Consider the top spiritual milestones in your life besides your salvation, the ones that changed you and you will always remember. What specific milestones has God brought you through and when did they occur (Column A), in what ways did you witness God’s power firsthand (Column B), and what specific changes has this milestone allowed you to make as a result (Column C)?

A. MILESTONE (WHEN DID IT HAPPEN)	B. SPECIFIC WAYS I WAS AN EYEWITNESS TO GOD’S POWER	C. SPECIFIC LIFE CHANGES I HAVE MADE AS A RESULT

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

-----x x x x x x-----
Mini Study 8: Sukkot, Anyone? The Feast of Tabernacles

Peter made a strange reference to building tabernacles during Christ's Transfiguration in the Matthew 17 account. What he was referring to was the Feast of Tabernacles, a very Jewish and Old Testament custom. Following Christ's victory at Armageddon, He establishes His Millennial Kingdom and begins to rule from Jerusalem...



Zechariah 14:16-19 (NKJV)

And it shall come to pass that everyone who is left of all the nations which came against Jerusalem shall go up from year to year to worship the King, the LORD of hosts, and to keep the Feast of Tabernacles. v17 And it shall be that whichever of the families of the earth do not come up to Jerusalem to worship the King, the LORD of hosts, on them there will be no rain. v18 If the family of Egypt will not come up and enter in, they shall have no rain; they shall receive the plague with which the LORD strikes the nations who do not come up to keep the Feast of Tabernacles. v19 This shall be the punishment of Egypt and the punishment of all the nations that do not come up to keep the Feast of Tabernacles.

MSQ1: To whom does participation in the Feast of Tabernacles (*Sukkot*) apply?

ALL NATIONS, meaning all of the Gentiles and Jews who have come through the Great Tribulation as believers are required to participate, and come up to Jerusalem to worship and participate there.

MSQ2: What are the consequences of not observing this feast? What does this suggest about the Millennium?

Rain will be withheld for all nations not being in obedience to this. In addition to no rain, Egypt will additionally come under a plague for not obeying. This suggests that there will be a form of outward compliance, but inward lying, just as there is today...and this is why Jesus Christ will rule with a rod of iron...ZERO TOLERANCE. Since Egypt relied on the Nile instead of rain, it has an additional plague. Anyone who does not rely on God at this time will be dealt with rather severely...

§ Egypt's reliance on rain versus its reliance on the overflowing of the Nile River



Zechariah 14:20-21 (NKJV)

In that day "HOLINESS TO THE LORD" shall be engraved on the bells of the horses. The pots in the LORD'S house shall be like the bowls before the altar. v21 Yes, every pot in Jerusalem and Judah shall be holiness to the LORD of hosts. Everyone who sacrifices shall come and take them and cook in them. In that day there shall no longer be a Canaanite in the house of the LORD of hosts.

MSQ3: What is meant by engraving "HOLINESS TO THE LORD" on the bells of the horses and a discussion of 'holy' pots?

These are two representatives of things used in the everyday living of life...what we might consider to be secular stuff. What this passage clearly points out is that the division between secular and sacred is eliminated, all items are set apart for God and made clean by Him. WHERE HOLINESS PREVAILS, CEREMONIAL SANCTIFICATION IS NO LONGER NECESSARY!

MSQ4: What does the reference to the 'Canaanite' mean in verse 21?

Canaanites represent things that are unholy and ungodly...thus this means that this will be a time of true holiness and godliness in Jerusalem and Judea (but perhaps not in all other parts of the world, where men will feign obedience to God but hide rebellion in their hearts, awaiting the release of Satan at the end of the Millennium to incite another rebellion against God...

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

This time spoken of by Zechariah will be the answer to a two thousand year old question...

Acts 1:6-7 NKJV

So when they met together, they asked him, "Lord, are you at this time going to restore the kingdom to Israel?" He said to them: "It is not for you to know the times or dates the Father has set by his own authority. (Acts 1:6-7)

§ A pre-requisite condition for Jesus' return is the nat *national* rep *repentance* of Israel:

Acts 3:19-20 NKJV

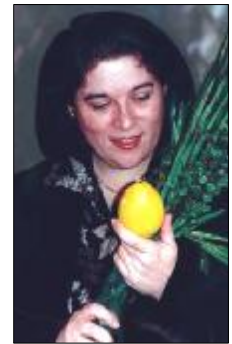
Peter, speaking to the people after healing the crippled man in the temple: Repent, then, and turn to God, so that your sins may be wiped out, that times of refreshing may come from the Lord, and that he may send the Christ, who has been appointed for you-- even Jesus.

that He may send...AGAIN!!!!

§ Notice the timing of this passage...following Jesus' ascension into heaven

Leviticus 23:33-44 (NIV)

The LORD said to Moses, v34 "Say to the Israelites: 'On the fifteenth day of the seventh month the LORD's Feast of Tabernacles begins, and it lasts for seven days. v35 The first day is a sacred assembly; do no regular work. v36 For seven days present offerings made to the LORD by fire, and on the eighth day hold a sacred assembly and present an offering made to the LORD by fire. It is the closing assembly; do no regular work. v37 ("These are the LORD's appointed feasts, which you are to proclaim as sacred assemblies for bringing offerings made to the LORD by fire-- the burnt offerings and grain offerings, sacrifices and drink offerings required for each day. v38 These offerings are in addition to those for the LORD's Sabbaths and in addition to your gifts and whatever you have vowed and all the freewill offerings you give to the LORD.) v39 "'So beginning with the fifteenth day of the seventh month, after you have gathered the crops of the land, celebrate the festival to the LORD for seven days; the first day is a day of rest, and the eighth day also is a day of rest. v40 On the first day you are to take choice fruit from the trees, and palm fronds, leafy branches and poplars, and rejoice before the LORD your God for seven days. v41 Celebrate this as a festival to the LORD for seven days each year. This is to be a lasting ordinance for the generations to come; celebrate it in the seventh month. v42 Live in booths for seven days: All native-born Israelites are to live in booths v43 so your descendants will know that I had the Israelites live in booths when I brought them out of Egypt. I am the LORD your God.'" v44 So Moses announced to the Israelites the appointed feasts of the LORD.



MSQ5: What American holiday is this somewhat reminiscent of? Is there a similarity in the *intent* of the two holidays?

Thanksgiving...after you have gathered the crops

Both are to point us to the fact that it has been God who has blessed us with abundance, and we should be thankful for this...

MSQ6: What practical applications does God expect us to make, as knowledgeable and mature Christians, regarding the way that we celebrate holidays?

Good list – write on board

- § *Use this as an opportunity to properly instruct our children*
- § *Make sure that we are fully repentant and have sought God FIRST*
- § *Avoid making it all about us*
- § *Practice thankfulness (not a native condition to humans)*
- § *Private ceremony opportunity*

Given where Church-Age Christians will spend 1,000 years during the Millennium, we ought to get to know the origins and underlying reasons for this holiday...



[See Appendix Section for Sukkot: The Feast of Tabernacles](#)

-----x x x x x x-----

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

22. An Even More Overwhelming Argument

2 Peter 1:19-21 NKJV

And so we have the prophetic word confirmed, which you do well to heed as a light that shines in a dark place, until the day dawns and the morning star rises in your hearts; 20 knowing this first, that no prophecy of Scripture is of any private interpretation, 21 for prophecy never came by the will of man, but holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Spirit.

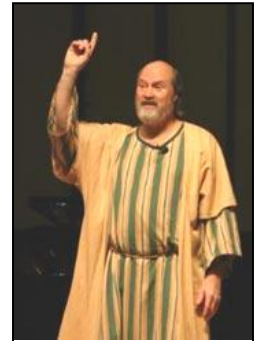
§ And so we have the prophetic word confirmed (NKJV)

§ We also have a more sure word of prophecy (KJV)

⤴ *more sure than what?*

Q1: What is the context of Peter's statement (hint: what topic was he writing about immediately preceding this)?

Peter was discussing the fact that he was an eye-witness to the events of Jesus' life, and that as an eye-witness, his testimony would stand up in court, meeting the standard required for admissible evidence.



"I tell you, we have an even more sure word of prophecy to validate what I am saying!"

Q2: What is Peter's argument?

§ *Eyewitness testimony is much better than contrived arguments*

§ *Prophecy fulfilled is better than eyewitness testimony*

§ *Why? Because eyewitnesses may lie, but fulfilled prophecy cannot*

Deuteronomy 17:6 NKJV

6 Whoever is deserving of death shall be put to death on the testimony of two or three witnesses; he shall not be put to death on the testimony of one witness.

John 8:17-18 NKJV

17 It is also written in your law that the testimony of two men is true. 18 I am One who bears witness of Myself, and the Father who sent Me bears witness of Me."



§ *Heed as a light that shines in a dark place*

We've all seen how searchlights are very evident in a night sky

§ Light dispels da darkness and allows you to see details cl clearly

§ Light also dispels spi spiritual darkness, which sometimes is the force behind cont contrived arguments against the Word of God.

§ *Until the day dawns and the morning star rises in your hearts*

§ Until – *heos hou until which time that*

§ Until what happens? *Jesus Christ returns bodily (2nd Coming) and we no longer have to rely on prophecy as proof, since He will be here in the flesh!*

Matthew 5:17-18 NKJV

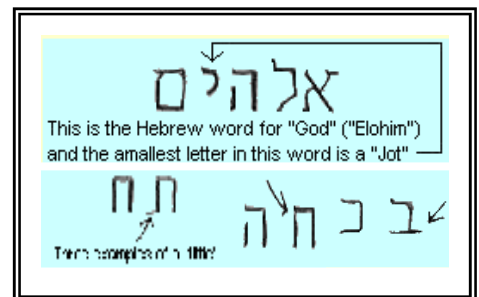
"Do not think that I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I did not come to destroy but to fulfill. 18 For assuredly, I say to you, till heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one tittle will by no means pass from the law till all is fulfilled.

Psalms 40:7 KJV (also quoted by Paul in Hebrews 10:7)

Then said I, Lo, I come: in the volume of the book it is written of me

Q3: What did Jesus testify of Himself with regards to prophecy?

He stated that He would fulfill all prophecy, and since He stated this at the time of His first coming, He was referring to both then (the 300+ prophecies in the Old Testament of His first coming) and the 1800+ prophecies of His second coming. Interesting how He links it to the heaven and earth passing away, which, according to Scripture, happens at the GWTJ. The entire Bible are the Scriptures which testify of Jesus...Psalm 40:7 says "Look, I'm coming!" (the first time!)



Revelation 19:10b NKJV I am your fellow servant, and of your brethren who have the testimony of Jesus. Worship God! For the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy."

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Verses 20-21: knowing this first, that no prophecy of Scripture is of any private interpretation, 21 for prophecy never came by the will of man, but holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Spirit.



Q4: What is the significance of the phrase, *knowing this first*?

Whenever we see a phrase like this, we should ask "What first?" It is usually following the phrase, and as such, it is marked for us to be of FIRST IMPORTANCE; i.e.; a foundational truth. As a foundational truth, it has "stand alone" principal and application written all over it...it is something we need to know and apply. "knowing" – ginosko – recognize, perceive, understand

§ NIV: "No prophecy of the Scripture came about by the prophet's own interpretation"

§ There are four ways scholars have interpreted this verse:

§ Scripture should be interpreted only in context; that is, a prophecy cannot stand alone without other prophecies to aid in its understanding

True but cannot be overly applied – ex: Hosea 11:1 – it is a stand-alone prophecy, but validated by Matt 2:5 our of Egypt

§ Scripture should not be interpreted according to one's own liking

True Holy Spirit

§ Scripture cannot be correctly interpreted without the Holy Spirit

§ The prophecies did not originate with the prophets themselves

True as well, and in the context of this passage, the most applicable view

§ interpretation – *epilupseos* *unloosing, explanation*

§ is (came about) – *ginetai* *arose, came to pass, came about*

§ this passage therefore speaks about the so source of the prophecy and therefore of the Scriptures *the act of interpretation is implied, but the source is the main point...pointing back to an infallible God*

§ therefore, in the Bible there is an integrity of design that points to a designer,

and each part of Scripture takes relevance as it fits into the "whole counsel" of God (Acts 20:27)

§ 66 books, 40 writers, ~2,000 year span but ONE AUTHOR!

§ for prophecy never came by the will of man *the writers simply did not sit down and decide to write the Bible...they were not the 'thought leader' in the process*

§ but holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Spirit *there were several qualifications required of the writers – they had to be holy men of God and they had to be receptive to the task, and they had to be obedient to follow it through. God was the instigator, they were obedient. They did the writing, the Holy Spirit provided the "juice."*



§ moved by – *pheromenoi* *carried along, borne by, moved by*

§ Luke uses the same word in Acts 27:15, 17:

Acts 27:15-17 NKJV

15 So when the ship was caught, and could not head into the wind, we let her drive. 16 And running under the shelter of an island called Clauda, we secured the skiff with difficulty. 17 When they had taken it on board, they used cables to undergird the ship; and fearing lest they should run aground on the Syrtis Sands, they struck sail and so were driven.

Key Points:

§ *As the writers wrote, they were impelled by God's Spirit*

§ *What they wrote was inspired by God (II Timothy 3:16)*

§ *The Author of the words is God*

§ *The writers were conscious, willing partners in the process*

§ *They were not taking dictation or writing in a state of unconscious ecstasy*

§ *They used their own vernacular and own familiar cultures from which to write*



No wonder that prophecy is more sure than an eyewitness ... it is the very words of God Himself!

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)



Mini Study 9: The Science of Probability and Prophecy

Based on a study developed by Peter Stoner

There are more than 300 prophecies in the Old Testament of the Messiah's First Coming, and over 1,800 prophecies of His Second Coming. Many of these prophecies were written over 1,000 years prior to His First Coming.



Exactly 100 people:
 § 50 are male
 § 50 are left-handed
 § 50 were born in an odd numbered year

Probability is the science statistics of determining the mathematical likelihood of something happening by random chance after thoroughly examining all of the variable components.

What is the probability that I could randomly select one person from the group on the left, who is a right-handed female born in an even numbered year?

1 out of 2 (half are right-handed)
 x 1 out of 2 (half are female)
x 1 out of 2 (half were born in an even numbered year)
 1 out of 8 is the probability of this selection

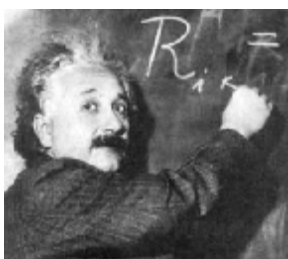
Let's take a look at the composite probability that an individual born at random, fulfilled just 8 popular prophecies of Jesus Christ's first coming:

Ü work through each probability

PROPHECY	VERSE GIVEN	VERSE FULFILLED	ODDS
1. Messiah would be born in Bethlehem Ephratah	Micah 5:2	Matthew 2:1	1:200,000
2. Messiah would present Himself as king while riding a donkey	Zechariah 9:9	Luke 19:35-37	1:100
3. Messiah would be betrayed for 30 pieces of silver	Zechariah 11:12	Matthew 26:15	1:1,000
4. Messiah's betrayal money would be thrown into the temple and subsequently given to a potter	Zechariah 11:13	Matthew 27:5-7	1:100,000
5. Messiah would have His side pierced	Zechariah 12:10	John 19:34	1:1,000
6. Messiah, though innocent, would not defend Himself	Isaiah 53:7	Matthew 27:12-14	1:1,000
7. Messiah would die with the wicked and be buried with the rich	Isaiah 53:9	Matthew 27:38; 57-60	1:1,000
8. Messiah would be executed by crucifixion	Psalm 22:16	Matthew 27:35	1:10,000
<i>Total composite probability</i>			1:10²⁸

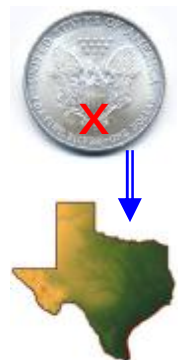
The total composite population of everyone who ever lived throughout history < 100 billion, which is 10¹¹
 If the universe were 15 billion years old, there would be roughly 10¹⁷ seconds

10²⁸ / 10¹¹ = 10¹⁷, which is 1 with 17 zeroes following it (100,000,000,000,000,000)



Einstein: to understand such an abstract number like 10¹⁷, construct a thought experiment...

Take the state of Texas and fill it 2 feet deep with silver dollars and mark one with a red x and place it in among the silver dollars. What are the odds that you could wander around and pick that specific silver dollar at random? 1 in 10¹⁷.



1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

What if you took another 8 prophecies of His first coming, which are no more rare than the first 8?

$$10^{28} \times 10^{28} = 10^{56}$$

$$10^{56} / 10^{11} = 10^{45}$$



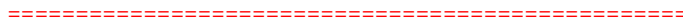
How big a ball of silver dollars do you need to visualize this thought experiment?

About 30 times the distance from the earth to the sun...



92.5 million miles

...and now find the one with the red x on the first try!



What if you took 48 (of the 300) prophecies of His first coming?

$$10^{28} \times 10^{28} \times 10^{28} \times 10^{28} \times 10^{28} \times 10^{28} = 10^{168}$$

$$10^{168} / 10^{11} = 10^{157}$$

What is the smallest thing you can measure? An atom...

Scientists estimate that there are 10^{66} atoms that make up the universe.

- § Make a ball of every atom in the universe
- § Make a ball for every such atom in the universe ($10^{66} \times 10^{66} = 10^{132}$)
- § Repeat the exercise, every second since the universe began ($10^{132} \times 10^{17} = 10^{149}$)
- § We are still short by 10,000,000 times (10^8)!
- § Now mark one of those atoms and find it at random...



By way of comparison, mathematicians say that "possible" ends at less than 1 in 10^{50}

MSQ1: What conclusions can you draw from the probability evidence of Jesus' first coming?

- § *Any man rejecting Jesus Christ as the Son of God is rejecting a fact proven more absolutely than any other fact in the world (Missler)*
- § *This is a MORE SURE WORD OF PROPHECY than eyewitness testimony*
- § *It is more provable than proving who you are or that you exist*

MSQ2: With 8 times the prophecies of His second coming, what conclusions can you draw?

- § *Clearly if He was proved to be Who He said He was when He came the first time, and He says He is coming back, only a stupid fool would argue the point...*



1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)



23. False Teachers, Part 1

2 Peter 2:1-3 NKJV

But there were also false prophets among the people, even as there will be false teachers among you, who will secretly bring in destructive heresies, even denying the Lord who bought them, and bring on themselves swift destruction. 2 And many will follow their destructive ways, because of whom the way of truth will be blasphemed. 3 By covetousness they will exploit you with deceptive words; for a long time their judgment has not been idle, and their destruction does not slumber.

§ Both 2 Peter 2 and Jude focus on this topic

§ This 'double testimony' by the Holy Spirit should get our attention

§ Paul also dealt with the same issue in 1 Corinthians 6:19-20; 7:23

§ These all serve as a dire warning for us today

Q1: Recall that Peter was the Apostle to the Jews. According to verse 1, from where will the false teachers arise? Was this a new problem for Peter's day? Is the same true today?

False teachers will arise from among the church itself. Peter's ministry focused on bringing the gospel to the Jews (Paul to the gentiles), so from among the Jewish 'believers' arose people who were false teachers.

It is not a new problem for Peter's day...there have been false teachers throughout the Bible...beginning with the Serpent in the Garden of Eden, the rebellion of Korah against Moses...read Malachi...etc.

This is absolutely true today, too...Time magazine March 15, 1993 showed two – David Koresh of Heaven's gate cult in Waco, TX, and Sheikh Omar Abdel Rahman, connected to the World Trade Center bombing in 1993

How to Spot a False Teacher

CHARACTERISTICS	SCRIPTURAL REFERENCE
1. They introduce false teaching s <u>secretly</u>	2 Peter 2:1 - But there were also false prophets among the people, even as there will be false teachers among you, who will secretly bring in destructive heresies, even denying the Lord who bought them
2. They deny the g <u>gospel</u>	
3. They bla <u>blaspheme</u> the truth ("the Word")	2 Peter 2:2 - And many will follow their destructive ways, because of whom the way of truth will be blasphemed
4. They seek to ex <u>exploit</u> their followers	2 Peter 2:3 - By covetousness they will exploit you with deceptive words
5. Their behavior is not the fruit of the S <u>Spirit</u>	Jeremiah 23:14 - Also I have seen a horrible thing in the prophets of Jerusalem: They commit adultery and walk in lies; They also strengthen the hands of evildoers, So that no one turns back from his wickedness.
6. They support those who also do e <u>evil</u>	
7. They seduce their followers with promises of p <u>peace</u>	Ezekiel 13:9a, 10a - "My hand will be against the prophets who envision futility and who divine lies...10 "Because, indeed, because they have seduced My people, saying, 'Peace!' when there is no peace... (see also Micah 3:5, Jeremiah 14:13)
8. They l <u>lie</u> out of the deceitfulness of their h <u>hearts</u>	Jeremiah 14:14-15 And the LORD said to me, "The prophets prophesy lies in My name. I have not sent them, commanded them, nor spoken to them; they prophesy to you a false vision, divination, a worthless thing, and the deceit of their heart.
9. They deny the de <u>deity</u> of Jesus Christ, that He in fact has come in the fl <u>flesh</u> , and the gospel of sal <u>salvation</u> itself	1 John 4:1-3 - Beloved, do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits, whether they are of God; because many false prophets have gone out into the world. 2 By this you know the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is of God, 3 and every spirit that does not confess that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is not of God.

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)



The US Treasury is tasked with the responsibility, among other things, of keeping the country and its citizens safe from counterfeit money. How does a Treasury agent tell the genuine from the counterfeit? Not by studying counterfeit money! Since there are new methods of counterfeiting being continually developed, you could never study all of the possible deviations from the genuine. So you must become an absolute expert in the genuine, so that all deviations from the genuine are obvious to you. Thus, to spot the counterfeit teachers, you must become an expert in the genuine Scriptures...

Verse 1: But there were also false prophets among the people, even as there will be false teachers among you, who will secretly bring in destructive heresies, even denying the Lord who bought them, and bring on themselves swift destruction.

Q2: What are the implications of the phrase in verse 1, "even denying the Lord who bought them?"

- § *It validates that Jesus Christ purchased 100% of humanity from the curse of death, since it is very unlikely that false teachers, as described, would be saved, since they deny Christ, whom they must take as Savior, in order to be saved*
- § *Therefore, salvation is available to EVERYONE, and EVERYONE is eligible for it*
- § *There is no "limited atonement," a theory that God saved only those who would accept salvation*

§ There is no heresy that the Scriptures have not already ant anticipated and refuted!

§ False teachers will attack the truth of the g gospel

I Corinthians 15:1-4 NKJV

1. Moreover, brethren, I declare to you the gospel which I preached to you, which also you received and in which you stand,
2. by which also you are saved, if you hold fast that word which I preached to you — unless you believed in vain.
3. For I delivered to you first of all that which I also received: that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures,
4. and that He was buried, and that He rose again the third day according to the Scriptures...

Paul, in his first letter to the Corinthians, defines the "gospel"

§ It is possible to believe in a false doctrine, which Paul states is believing in v vain (genuine vs. counterfeit)

§ Three points of the gospel:

- o Christ died for our sins according to Scriptures
- o He was b buried
- o He rose the third day according to Scripture

Q3: What is missing from Paul's definition? What hints does this give us to make our explanation more easily understood when we give it?

All of the other stuff that we might add to an otherwise simple definition!

Maybe we've complicated it by adding all sorts of stuff to it

Q4: Using Galatians 5:9, how is heresy like leaven?

A little leaven leavens the whole lump – a little heresy spoils the entire truth into which it is injected – think of how the serpent argued, getting Eve to add to God's instructions about eating from the tree, subtracting from it, changing it and finally denying it by saying that God lied...

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Verses 2-3: And many will follow their destructive ways, because of whom the way of truth will be blasphemed. 3 By covetousness they will exploit you with deceptive words; for a long time their judgment has not been idle, and their destruction does not slumber.

§ destructive – *aselgeiais* - **licentious, sexually perverse, wanton**
there are often sexually perverse practices taught by false teachers, who lead their congregations into following them – sexual perversion will be tied later to verse 4

§ blasphemed – *blasphemo* **speak ill or evil of**

§ covetousness – *pleonexia* **practice theft by fraud or extortion**
the purpose of the ‘ministry’ of some false teachers is to use the need of people to have spiritual beliefs to extort them into giving their money to the ‘ministry’ and therefore committing fraud and extortion – Jesus throwing out the money changers in the temple



Jesus dealt with similar false teachers, when he overthrew the tables of those who were extorting people coming to the temple to make sacrifices. (Matthew 21:15, Mark 11:15, John 2:5). These false teachers would tell the people their sacrifice was unacceptable to God and sell them “acceptable” animals at inflated prices for the pursuit of profit and unwarranted gain, not because they wanted to help people get right with God...



Some false teachers, like Jim Jones, fool their followers into doing unspeakable things...

§ exploit - *emporeuomai* **emporium; make merchandise of you, you are seen as an easy mark**
false teachers always have a sordid motive and are not interested in your good

§ deceptive - *plastois* **artificial, fictitious, false – they are faking it – sincerity is no guarantee of the truth**

§ ‘for a long time their judgment has not been idle’ **While God may not strike them down with a bolt of lightning and deal with them instantly, He has already judged them for what they have done, and their destruction as a result of the GWTJ will be for-ever!**

Revelation 20:11-15 NKJV

Then I saw a great white throne and Him who sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away. And there was found no place for them. 12 And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before God, and books were opened. And another book was opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged according to their works, by the things which were written in the books. 13 The sea gave up the dead who were in it, and Death and Hades delivered up the dead who were in them. And they were judged, each one according to his works. 14 Then Death and Hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. 15 And anyone not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire.



Q5: Given this horrible outcome, why will many follow their destructive ways (2 Peter 2:2)?

Because they will say things that will ‘tickle their ears,’ and have the ‘stamp of religious authority on bad things that the false teacher tells them is OK, that they want to do.

Many will follow out of ignorance, some out of not believing that God exists...agnostic = ignoramus

Paul's final words to Timothy put an exclamation point on the discussion!

2 Timothy 4:1-4 NKJV

I charge you therefore before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, who will judge the living and the dead at His appearing and His kingdom: 2 Preach the word! Be ready in season and out of season. Convince, rebuke, exhort, with all longsuffering and teaching. 3 For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but according to their own desires, because they have itching ears, they will heap up for themselves teachers; 4 and they will turn their ears away from the truth, and be turned aside to fables.

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

We have very little concept about the world pre-Flood, fall and fall of Satan. Pre-Flood world = antediluvian; Siberian woolly mammoths flash frozen with tropical vegetation still in their mouths; Pterodactyls who could not fly unless the atmospheric pressure was twice that of today; when did the dinosaurs roam, and were they killed in the Flood...lots of questions

24. False Teachers, Part 2

Peter now provides two examples of false teachers who fell, those who were taken in judgment along with the false teachers, and how God delivered those who stood with Him:

False Teachers	Collateral Damage	Those Delivered
The angels who sinned	Pre-Flood humanity	Noah & his family
Practicing sodomites in Sodom & Gomorrah	Citizens of the two towns	Lot & his two daughters



2 Peter 2:4-11 NKJV

Ū there is always collateral damage from false teachers

For if God did not spare the angels who sinned, but cast them down to hell and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved for judgment; 5 and did not spare the ancient world, but saved Noah, one of eight people, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood on the world of the ungodly; 6 and turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes, condemned them to destruction, making them an example to those who afterward would live ungodly; 7 and delivered righteous Lot, who was oppressed by the filthy conduct of the wicked 8(for that righteous man, dwelling among them, tormented his righteous soul from day to day by seeing and hearing their lawless deeds) — 9 then the Lord knows how to deliver the godly out of temptations and to reserve the unjust under punishment for the day of judgment, 10 and especially those who walk according to the flesh in the lust of uncleanness and despise authority. They are presumptuous, self-willed. They are not afraid to speak evil of dignitaries, 11 whereas angels, who are greater in power and might, do not bring a reviling accusation against them before the Lord.

§ The angels who sinned are the b'nai Elohim, who left their place in heaven and bred with h humanity, producing the race known as the NeNephillim (later, the Rehphaim, Anakim, etc- see ppg 58-62).

Q1: In what ways were the “angels who sinned” false teachers?

- § *Who were they teaching? Humans who listened and went along with their seduction; other angels; and all who read about what they did that was written for our learning*
- § *They taught humankind that they could void the natural order of things that God had set up in Genesis 1 of reproducing after ones’ own kind, which was in rebellion to God.*
- § *This was in defiance of the godly teaching of Adam, Seth, Enoch, Noah and others*
- § *Today the same is true – teaching of God’s Word versus other voices*

§ We learn something new about Noah here, that he was a preacher of righteousness *there are many examples of additional OT facts revealed in the NT (Stephen in Acts, here, Jude, etc.)*

Q2: In what ways did Noah serve as an *anti* false teacher? Do you think he saw himself as a teacher?

- § *Heritage + Walk: His bloodlines were pure human, with no intermingling of Nephillim (Gen 6:9) AND he walked right before God - Given the very same choices as his neighbors, he did not go along with the crowd*
- § *He acted on God’s direction and built the ark for 120 years, withstanding all the ridicule for 43,200 days*
- § *Clearly, when pressed for why he was building an ark, shared God’s directive to him...every nail was a sermon!*
- § *He probably, like most of us, didn’t see our role as teacher...but we are!*
- § *Who is watching? Our families, friends, visitors to LTM, co-workers, neighbors...even the angels!*

Q3: In what ways were the evildoers in Sodom and Gomorrah false teachers?

- § *Who were they teaching? The local inhabitants who tolerated their deviant sexual practices; other angels; and all who read about what they did that was written for our learning*
- § *They taught humankind that they could void the natural order of things that God had set up in Genesis 1 of heterosexual sex, which was in rebellion to God.*
- § *This was in defiance of the godly teaching of Adam, Seth, Enoch, Noah and others*
- § *Today the same is true – teaching of God’s Word versus other voices*

aselgeiais

§ Recall verse 2, “follow their destructive ways” refers to sins of s sexual p perversion

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

- § We learn something new about Lot here, that he was _____ *a righteous man, oppressed by what went on there*
- How is this so? *earlier in his life Lot became an OT saint, which did not prevent him from making bad choices (like where to raise his family)...once saved, always saved*
 - According to genesis 19:1, Lot was _____ *sitting in the gate of Sodom*, which meant that he _____ *was some kind of town official, like an alderman or councilman*. This double standard led to him being tormented in his soul day after day by what he s _____ *saw* and h _____ *heard****.
- § Once delivered from sin by salvation, a believer never has p _____ *peace* when dwelling in sin.
- § Was Lot saved? Yes. How? _____ *By at one time believing God paid the price for his sins*
- § It is interesting that Lot was saved through the fire that rained down on Sodom (I Cor. 3:15)
- Unlike Abraham (Hebrews 11:9), it is never said of Lot that by _____ *faith* he dwelt in the land.
 - By choosing to live there, he grew com _____ *comfortable* with com _____ *compromise*, which should be a clear warning to us. *Are you still SHOCKED by sin, or do you just accept it?*

Q4: In what ways did Lot serve as an *anti* false teacher? Do you think he saw himself as a teacher?

- § *Apparently he himself did not participate in the deviant homosexual practices of the day, but simply lived there with his family and tolerated it.*
- § *Somehow he must have been viewed favorably by the inhabitants to place him in a role of authority*
- § *Unsure of what good qualities he modeled, though he did try feebly to stop the pervs from taking his visitors, instead offering them his virgin daughters (they were virgins, so he taught them something...)*
- § *He likely did not see himself as a teacher*

Surrounding the story of Lot, we gain additional insight into the responsibilities of being a teacher:

Genesis 18:16-20 NKJV

Then the men rose from there and looked toward Sodom, and Abraham went with them to send them on the way. 17 And the LORD said, "Shall I hide from Abraham what I am doing, 18 since Abraham shall surely become a great and mighty nation, and all the nations of the earth shall be blessed in him? 19 For I have known him, in order that he may command his children and his household after him, that they keep the way of the LORD, to do righteousness and justice, that the LORD may bring to Abraham what He has spoken to him." 20 And the LORD said, "Because the outcry against Sodom and Gomorrah is great, and because their sin is very grave..."

- § God expected Abraham to t _____ *teach* his children and his household to _____ *keep the way of the Lord*
- § How he was to do this: *share what God had done with and for him; set the right example; pray for believers... take an active role in seeing what they are doing, admonishing, etc.*

§ Consider Abraham's conversation with God as an int _____ *intercessory* pra _____ *prayer* for Lot:

Genesis 18:23-33 NKJV

And Abraham came near and said, "Would You also destroy the righteous with the wicked? 24 Suppose there were fifty righteous within the city; would You also destroy the place and not spare it for the fifty righteous that were in it? 25 Far be it from You to do such a thing as this, to slay the righteous with the wicked, so that the righteous should be as the wicked; far be it from You! Shall not the Judge of all the earth do right?" 26 So the LORD said, "If I find in Sodom fifty righteous within the city, then I will spare all the place for their sakes." 27 Then Abraham answered and said, "Indeed now, I who am but dust and ashes have taken it upon myself to speak to the Lord: 28 Suppose there were five less than the fifty righteous; would You destroy all of the city for lack of five?" So He said, "If I find there forty-five, I will not destroy it." 29 And he spoke to Him yet again and said, "Suppose there should be forty found there?" So He said, "I will not do it for the sake of forty." 30 Then he said, "Let not the Lord be angry, and I will speak: Suppose thirty should be found there?" So He said, "I will not do it if I find thirty there." 31 And he said, "Indeed now, I have taken it upon myself to speak to the Lord: Suppose twenty should be found there?" So He said, "I will not destroy it for the sake of twenty." 32 Then he said, "Let not the Lord be angry, and I will speak but once more: Suppose ten should be found there?" And He said, "I will not destroy it for the sake of ten." 33 So the LORD went His way as soon as He had finished speaking with Abraham; and Abraham returned to his place.

Clearly our intercessory prayers for those who have been given into our care, is critical to being an effective teacher

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Verses 9-11 then the Lord knows how to deliver the godly out of temptations and to reserve the unjust under punishment for the day of judgment, 10 and especially those who walk according to the flesh in the lust of uncleanness and despise authority. They are presumptuous, self-willed. They are not afraid to speak evil of dignitaries, 11 whereas angels, who are greater in power and might, do not bring a reviling accusation against them before the Lord.



Q5: Verse 9 is the summarizing statement to verse 4-9, and demonstrates God's complete sovereignty. Coupled with 1 Corinthians 10:12-13 (below), what specific conclusions about remaining godly while living can you draw from living in a world full of false teachers and temptation?

- § *God is wholly sovereign*
- § *He provides a way of escape for everyone, just as He provided a way to escape death for everyone (salvation through Christ). Just as some may chose to take the escape, God allows us to make the choice (the sovereignty of man)*
- § *The way of escape is there...we are required to LOOK for it, and then take it. Sometimes it means flee, sometimes it means fight, sometimes it means just stand and believe God*
- § *False teachers will seek to manipulate us through wrong teaching and appealing to the lust of the flesh – we need to know them so that we are not caught unawares: ANTICIPATE EVIL and resist*

1 Corinthians 10:12-13 NKJV

Therefore let him who thinks he stands take heed lest he fall. 13 No temptation has overtaken you except such as is common to man; but God is faithful, who will not allow you to be tempted beyond what you are able, but with the temptation will also make the way of escape, that you may be able to bear it.

The qualities of those on whom judgment will fall:

- § They walk according to the f flesh, which is characterized by lustful excess (“I will do whatever I want to do”) *I'm not hurting anyone...I have a right to do this...you can't stop me...what right do you have to pass judgment on me?...you do your thing, I'll do mine...if it feels good, do it*
- § They reject all au authority, including: God, the Bible, laws, morality,
 - Why? To escape acc _____ for their own actions so that they can be se _____
"If there is no God, then there are no consequences for me doing what I want to do when I want to do it. You only get one life, and I'm going to get all I can get out of mine."
- § presumptuous – *tolmetes* *Extreme daring, bodacious – they do whatever they please*
- § self-willed - *authades* *From 'autos' meaning self and 'hedone' meaning to please sensually via lust*
- § speak evil of – *blasphemo* *They cuss 'em out and deride them*
- § dignitaries - *doxas* *That which is praised, honored, worshipped, glorious...by implication: GOD*



False teachers are to be left to God's accusation and judgment, not yours.

Q6: What is the meaning of verse 11? (hint: who are the specific angels, who is being accused?)

*The specific angels are those who are loyal to God
Those being accused are the false teachers et. al.*

While it is easy to use the authority of Scripture to do to the false teachers what they do to Scripture (rail against it, blaspheme it, etc), angels – who are far more powerful than humans and who have remained faithful to God longer than the 32 seconds that we do – do not rail against the false teachers to God. Instead, they trust God that He will, in His own good time, deal with them justly.

Key point: mature believers trust God to make things turn out all right in the end...

What you again see here is a picture of God's longsuffering mercy, given so that in case any of them repents, he or she might have time to join the family! Can you imagine being an angel, having all that power and authority, and yet trusting God to set things right. We rail against the slightest offenses; they hold their tongues against the worst of offenders...

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

-----x x x x x x-----

Mini Study 10: Angels Who Don't Accuse Dignitaries

In a passage that many scholars feel parallels 2 Peter 2-3, the Book of Jude illustrates 1 Peter 2:11 [whereas angels, who are greater in power and might, do not bring a reviling accusation against them before the Lord] with one of the most bizarre examples ever:

Jude 8-10 NKJV

Likewise also these dreamers defile the flesh, reject authority, and speak evil of dignitaries. 9 Yet Michael the archangel, in contending with the devil, when he disputed about the body of Moses, dared not bring against him a reviling accusation, but said, "The Lord rebuke you!"



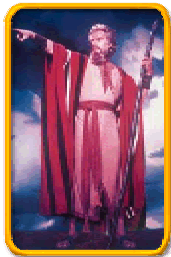
Is there a more worthy person who deserves accusation than Satan? After all, one of his primary occupations is to unjustly accuse those who love God:

§ Zechariah 3:1 NIV Then he showed me Joshua the high priest standing before the angel of the LORD, and *Satan standing at his right side to accuse him.*

§ Revelation 12:10 NIV Then I heard a loud voice in heaven say: "Now have come the salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God, and the authority of his Christ. For the *accuser of our brothers, who accuses them before our God day and night*, has been hurled down.

§ Job 1:9-11 NKJV So Satan answered the LORD and said, "Does Job fear God for nothing? 10 Have You not made a hedge around him, around his household, and around all that he has on every side? You have blessed the work of his hands, and his possessions have increased in the land. 11 But now, stretch out Your hand and touch all that he has, *and he will surely curse You to Your face!*"

§ Job 2:3-5 NKJV Then the LORD said to Satan, "Have you considered My servant Job, that there is none like him on the earth, a blameless and upright man, one who fears God and shuns evil? And still he holds fast to his integrity, *although you incited Me against him, to destroy him without cause.*" 4 So Satan answered the LORD and said, "Skin for skin! Yes, all that a man has he will give for his life. 5 But stretch out Your hand now, and touch his bone and his flesh, *and he will surely curse You to Your face!*"



We know that Moses was not permitted by God to set foot in the Promised Land (Deuteronomy 32:49-52) because of his sin, and that he died in the wilderness prior to the Jews entering into Caanan...

Deuteronomy 34:5-7 NKJV

So Moses the servant of the LORD died there in the land of Moab, according to the word of the LORD. 6 And He buried him in a valley in the land of Moab, opposite Beth Peor; but no one knows his grave to this day. 7 Moses was one hundred and twenty years old when he died. His eyes were not dim nor his natural vigor diminished.

MSQ1: Who buried Moses and specifically where is his grave located?

God Himself buried Moses in the land of Moab near Beth Peor, but nobody knows specifically where. Based on the language of the Deut 34 passage, God intended for nobody to know exactly where. Here is a case of God having His own purposes, and doing as he sees appropriate...

MSQ2: According to Jude 8-10 above, what must have happened following Moses' death?

Somehow, Satan must have wanted Moses' body for some no-good purpose, and contended with the chief of angels, Michael, for the body. Moses' soul would have joined Abraham in the upper chamber of Hades, and normally the body would have decomposed back into dust; however, God had other purposes...

MSQ3: How did Michael, the archangel, deal with Satan, the former archangel, in this matter?

These are the number 2 and number 3 most powerful beings in Creation. Satan, at this time, had been fully cast out of heaven (3rd) and had God's judgment pronounced on him. The whole of heaven knew his as the embodiment of evil. Yet Michael, locked in a struggle with this evil being, did not accuse him, but left the accusation and judgment to God alone...

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

So why would Satan want Moses' body? A speculation about the rest of the story...

Numbers 21:4-9 NKJV

And the people spoke against God and against Moses: "Why have you brought us up out of Egypt to die in the wilderness? For there is no food and no water, and our soul loathes this worthless bread." 6 So the LORD sent fiery serpents among the people, and they bit the people; and many of the people of Israel died. 7 Therefore the people came to Moses, and said, "We have sinned, for we have spoken against the LORD and against you; pray to the LORD that He take away the serpents from us." So Moses prayed for the people. 8 Then the LORD said to Moses, "Make a fiery serpent, and set it on a pole; and it shall be that everyone who is bitten, when he looks at it, shall live." 9 So Moses made a bronze serpent, and put it on a pole; and so it was, if a serpent had bitten anyone, when he looked at the bronze serpent, he lived.



Idiomatically, to the Levitical mind:

§ serpents represent _____ *sin* _____

§ brass (or bronze) represents _____ *judgment, since it was the metal that could stand up to fire*
Leviticly, fire was used to consume offerings for sin and represents consuming judgment

MSQ4: What is this a picture of?

a fiery serpent was seen as God's judgment for their sin (grumbling against their God-appointed leaders! – recall Mini Study 5!). A bronze serpent on a pole is sin judged as a substitutionary payment for the sin of the guilty.

Even Jesus uses this as an OT prophecy of Himself: John 3:14 NKJV And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of Man be lifted up,

MSQ5: What specifically delivered people from the fiery serpent's death?

That the people looked at (nabat – look intently upon, behold, consider) the bronze serpent for deliverance, this is akin to considering their sin and accepting a substitutionary payment to be made...

Did the Jews destroy the bronze serpent after it had that day been used to stop people from dying? Apparently not, according to its next reference in Scripture...

2 Kings 18:4-6 NKJV

He [Hezekiah] removed the high places and broke the sacred pillars, cut down the wooden image and broke in pieces the bronze serpent that Moses had made; for until those days the children of Israel burned incense to it, and called it Nehushtan. 5 He trusted in the LORD God of Israel, so that after him was none like him among all the kings of Judah, nor who were before him.

§ Nehushtan = _____ *a worthless thing* _____

MSQ6: After several centuries, what had the people done with the bronze serpent? What was the danger in what they were doing?

They had made it into a relic to be worshipped (i.e.; a fetish), specifically violating God's directives about pagan worship. We are to worship God and not idols made with hands. Even today we do it with "Holy Water," rosary beads, Madonna statues, and all sorts of other NEHUSHTAN...



Shroud of Turin...
Nehushtan?

MSQ7: What does this suggest Satan might have planned for the body of Moses?

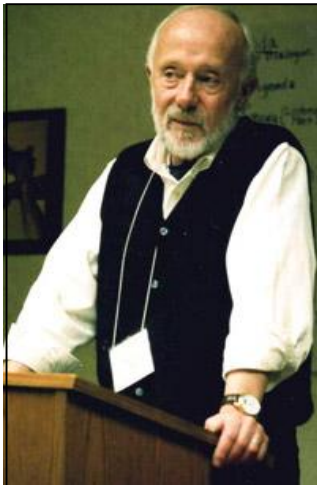
Satan may have planned on using Moses body as a fetish for the Jewish people...

2 Corinthians 2:11 NKJV

...lest Satan should take advantage of us; for we are not ignorant of his devices.

-----x x x x x x-----

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)



The "Jesus Seminar" stands as an example of scholars debating Jesus, not from the Scriptures, but from their own opinions and "vote" facts into existence about Him. Any organization that teaches other than what Scripture says, is a false teacher.

25. False Teachers Unmasked

Peter reserves some incredibly harsh words for false teachers:

2 Peter 2:12-22 NKJV

But these, like natural brute beasts made to be caught and destroyed, speak evil of the things they do not understand, and will utterly perish in their own corruption, 13 and will receive the wages of unrighteousness, as those who count it pleasure to carouse in the daytime. They are spots and blemishes, carousing in their own deceptions while they feast with you, 14 having eyes full of adultery and that cannot cease from sin, enticing unstable souls. They have a heart trained in covetous practices, and are accursed children. 15 They have forsaken the right way and gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Beor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness; 16 but he was rebuked for his iniquity: a dumb ass speaking with a man's voice restrained the madness of the prophet.

17 These are wells without water, clouds carried by a tempest, for whom is reserved the blackness of darkness forever. 18 For when they speak great swelling words of emptiness, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through lewdness, the ones who have actually escaped from those who live in error. 19 While they promise them liberty, they themselves are slaves of corruption; for by whom a person is overcome, by him also he is brought into bondage. 20 For if, after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, they are again entangled in them and overcome, the latter end is worse for them than the beginning. 21 For it would have been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than having known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered to them. 22 But it has happened to them according to the true proverb: "A dog returns to his own vomit," and, "a sow, having washed, to her wallowing in the mire."

Q1: Use 2 Peter 2:12-16 to complete the chart below:

What they do	<p>§ <i>Speak evil of what they don't understand (pseudo-intellectuals)</i></p> <p>§ <i>Indulging their own deceptions while they interact with you (feast with you)</i></p> <p>§ <i>Have their hearts trained in covetous practices – pleonexias – extortion, greediness</i></p>
How they do it	<p>§ <i>Through deception – sound like they know what they are talking about and are able to dupe those around them</i></p> <p>§ <i>They entice – they package their deceit with attractive words and promises, until the person becomes trapped in their enticements</i></p>
Who they do it to	<p>§ <i>Anyone they can, but specifically they prey on those around them who are vulnerable to their advances and arguments</i></p> <p>§ <i>They are always seeking people to take advantage of (eyes full of adultery – v14)</i></p>
How God views it	<p>§ <i>He will catch and destroy them (v12) as they perish in their own (unsaved) corruption</i></p> <p>§ <i>As accursed children (v14) "utterly perish" suggests a future of no hope</i></p> <p>§ <i>As ones whom He will rebuke (v16) likely on Judgment Day</i></p>

§ v12: natural beasts – *aloga zoota* *brute or unreasonable as an animal*

§ v14: enticing – *deleazo* *a fishing term meaning to catch with bait – Peter was a fisherman! And a fisher of men...*

§ unstable souls – *psuchas asteeriktous* *vacillating psches – this I believe is a pointed reference to the fact that psychology is effective in getting to the guilt that lies behind most psychological problems, but is utterly ineffective because it never deals with the cause of that guilt, sin. Sin makes us guilty. Only Christ can solve that problem...*

§ heart trained – *gumnazo* *exercised – root word in gymnasium – they have exercised their covetousness by continually indulging in it, making it into a practice*

§ v15: the way of Balaam *refer to Numbers 22-24 and 31:16 – a very specific and pointed reference to pretending to be subject to the Lord, but inwardly craving the riches of the world if God can use a dumb ass with Balaam, He can certainly use us/me!*

1 Timothy 6:10 NKJV: For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil, for which some have strayed from the faith in their greediness, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows .

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

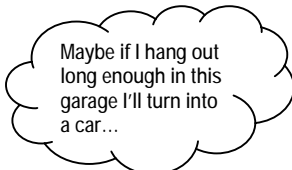
Verses 17-19: These are wells without water, clouds carried by a tempest, for whom is reserved the blackness of darkness forever. 18 For when they speak great swelling words of emptiness, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through lewdness, the ones who have actually escaped from those who live in error. 19 While they promise them liberty, they themselves are slaves of corruption; for by whom a person is overcome, by him also he is brought into bondage.



Expecting rain?

Q2: What is meant by the analogy of wells and clouds, and how does it apply to these false teachers?

You dig a well with the expectation of finding water. Storm clouds bring the expectation of rain. Both serve to remind you that what looks like the real thing, right down to the structure and form and function, may be just a mirage. False teachers seem genuine, speak the “churchese” lingo, point to the Bible and quote passages (remember, Satan did that with Jesus during His temptation!), hang out in churches, B serve in ministries....but are not genuine.



Q3: Thinking about some of the notorious false teachers in history, provide at least two examples that illustrate verse 18.

- § **Koresh and Jones promised their followers they would meet Christ if they committed suicide**
- § **Fanatical Muslim clerics promise members of Jihad they will get seven virgins and go to heaven if they suicide bomb**
- § **Hitler promised Germany it would be the master race if they exterminated Jews**
- § **Bogus TV preachers promise eternal life if viewers send money**
- §

Q4: According verse 17b, can these false teachers be saved? Why or why not?

The language of verse 17 would be true for all human beings: blackest darkness is reserved for everyone...who fails to accept the substitutionary death and resulting salvation of Jesus Christ. Just like any human being, a false teacher can 1. recognize his sin, 2. understand that the penalty for that sin is death and eternal separation from God (blackness of darkness), 3. repent and ask forgiveness, 4. accept Christ's payment on their behalf, and so become saved.

However, the likelihood of these folks doing that is remote. For with every lie they believe and accept as truth, every error compounding upon itself, they forcibly resist God reaching out to them. As Timothy points out below, their consciences become seared with a hot iron, forming an impenetrable callus. There is a high probability that these folks will die still believing a lie, and it will cost them an eternity in Gehenna Hell..

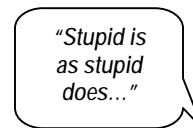
Competent Apostles Agree We Are Nearing The End Times !

1 Timothy 4:1-3 NKJV

Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons, 2 speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron, 3 forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from foods which God created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and know the truth.

Q5: How can someone who is free, once again become entangled and lose their freedom, as verse 19 speaks about?

Great question, and opne that Peter takes on here, and in the following verses. The answer is easy to understand: a failure to grow up and mature in the faith means that you have a limited knowledge of the Scriptures and are therefore unequipped to deal with false teachers...you are attracted by their waterless wells and dry clouds, expecting them to be genuine, but instead get duped by them.



This is a call to maturity!

Û be prepared for false teachers by knowing the genuine, asking the Spirit's leading, and do what Paul commended the Bereans for: searching the Scriptures daily to see if these things were true...

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Verses 20-22: For if, after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, they are again entangled in them and overcome, the latter end is worse for them than the beginning. 21 For it would have been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than having known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered to them. 22 But it has happened to them according to the true proverb: "A dog returns to his own vomit," and, "a sow, having washed, to her wallowing in the mire."

§ escaped – *apofugontes* **From 2 roots, apo – away; fugo – run, vanish, escape – completely get away**

§ pollutions - *miasmata* **The effects of moral foulness**

§ knowledge of – *epignoosei* **Recognition of, discernment of, acknowledgement of**

§ entangled – *emplakentes* **Fishing term! To get caught in a net and not be able to escape**

§ overcome – *heettoontai* **To be vanquished, become less or worse than before**

Q6: According to this passage, were these false teachers ever saved? Why or why not?

No, they were not saved.

Knowing what the truth is and believing it are two completely different things. I know that Allah is the Muslim god, but I don't believe he is God (I do believe that if not Satan, he is a mechanism of Satan to draw worship to Satan and away from God).

§ Do not confuse pro profession of faith with the rea reality of it.

§ It's one thing to know the Chr Christian S System and another thing to know Chr Christ as S Savior!

Paul expands on these folks

2 Timothy 3:5-9 NIV

5 having a form of godliness but denying its power. Have nothing to do with them. 6 They are the kind who worm their way into homes and gain control over weak-willed women, who are loaded down with sins and are swayed by all kinds of evil desires, 7 *always learning but never able to acknowledge the truth.* 8 Just as Jannes and Jambres opposed Moses, so also these men oppose the truth — men of depraved minds, who, as far as the faith is concerned, are rejected.

Q7: What is the key warning Peter is giving to his readers in verses 20-22?

That you run the same risk as these people by getting entangled in the "1 degree off the true course" teaching that these false teachers profess to be true. Their fate is going to be eternal separation from God. While you as a believer cannot become unsaved, you can fall into bondage to false teaching.

People who take up a series of doctrines for a time are always going to be vulnerable to giving them up for a more compelling set of false doctrines!

Q8: Why is the "latter end worse for them than the beginning" (v20)?

Because now they are clearly an object of satanic attack, to be abused with troubles once they have served their purpose, and far too callused to accept the truth when Satan start hammering away at them...by this time they are so depraved that they will blame God for their troubles and difficulty, instead of being able to discern the true source of their misery. False doctrine is like a cancer – unnoticed at first as something wrong – in fact, you might feel like you've somehow stumbled onto the truth - and then, wham, you're dying and you cannot stop it.



Q9: What point is Peter making about the dog eating its vomit and the pig wallowing in the mire? **A dog vomits up what makes it sick, and is delivered, but later returns and re-eats the same thing that made them sick! Why? Because that is the nature of the dog. A pig that is delivered from its coating of filth but returns to it because that is the nature of the pig. If you look at the nature of an unsaved person, regardless of what they profess, they will always return to a sinful life because that is their nature**

The punishment of a false teacher is that they will be given over to the lot they have chosen. God underwrites man's deliberate choice. In the end, we all go to 'our own place.' No one is in hell because of their sin, but because of their deliberate choice of where to spend their eternity.

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

25. Remembrance, Skepticism and Willful Ignorance

2 Peter 3:1-7 NKJV

Beloved, I now write to you this second epistle (in both of which I stir up your pure minds by way of reminder), 2 that you may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us, the apostles of the Lord and Savior, 3 knowing this first: that scoffers will come in the last days, walking according to their own lusts, 4 and saying, "Where is the promise of His coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of creation." 5 For this they willfully forget: that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of water and in the water, 6 by which the world that then existed perished, being flooded with water. 7 But the heavens and the earth which are now preserved by the same word, are reserved for fire until the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men.

§ stir up - *diegeiro* **rouse fully, awaken to full alertness**

§ reminder - *hupomnesis* **a remembrance, reminding or recollection of something you know**

Q1: What specifically is Peter calling for us to remember? Why is this an important part of our maturing as Christians?

Peter is wanting us to go beyond simple reading of a verse and understanding it. He is telling us that we need to place it into our minds, even memorize the verse, so that that we are able to stir it up on command. This is one of the ways that God enables us to be equipped for battle, and what he expects from us as disciples of Christ. Consider anything we did as a child that we had to master...it took discipline to learn it, but once we did, the skill stayed with us as long as we exercised it...

Use the example - the baby: it is ALL ABOUT ME



Spoon feeding is for babies who cannot feed themselves. At some point in time, the child must become capable of eating whole foods and feeding themselves...

Q2: As a new believer, what things are our *spoon-feeding* to learn God's Word?

- § *Sunday School* - *Radio programs*
- § *Awana* - *study programs (Beth Moore et al)*
- § *ABF* - *CDs and tapes*
- § *Sunday Sermon* - *small group Bible studies*
- § *Mentoring / discipling relationships*

Q3: How does God equip us to *feed ourselves* and become mature believers?

- § *He gives us the Holy Spirit to enable us to understand the Scriptures and apply them*
- § *He gave us His Word*
- § *He gives us time*
- § *He gives us a mind capable of reading, analyzing, connecting, storing, recalling*
- § *He gives us access today to vast technologies to enhance our self-study, PC Bibles, free Internet Bibles*
- §

SOME TOUGH, GET HONEST QUESTIONS:

- § Why do so many Christian not progress past spoon-feeding?
- § Do I come to church, expecting to be "fed" and get angry when I'm not?
- § Do I come to church looking to fellowship, encourage and feed others?
- § Where am I in this process? Baby food? Solid food? Occasional food?



Putting Things Into Proper Perspective

The Apostle Peter *had just three years of discipleship* under Jesus Christ before God gave him the responsibility to be the principal apostle to the Jews!

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*



Verses 3-7: knowing this first: that scoffers will come in the last days, walking according to their own lusts, 4 and saying, "Where is the promise of His coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of creation." 5 For this they willfully forget: that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of water and in the water, 6 by which the world that then existed perished, being flooded with water. 7 But the heavens and the earth which are now preserved by the same word, are reserved for fire until the Day of Judgment and perdition of ungodly men.

§ scoffer – *empaiktai* **One who derides, mocks or scoffs; by implication, a false teacher – scoffing scoffers is the**
 § promise - *epangelia* **an announcement, message, divine assurance, promise**

Q4: Why does Peter want us to "know this first" regarding scoffers?

Because God told us this would happen to warn us, and because they would offer up compelling arguments to support their false teaching, arguments that would make believing their lies easy.

ἐμπαϊγμονῆ	ἐμπαϊκται
1701	1703
empaigmoneé	empaiktai
	scoffers,

One of the sure signs of the last days is the increasing numbers and presence of these false teachers, who use "science" to bolster their argument...and almost all of science is knowing 1-5%, and conjecturing the 95-99%

Q5: What are the arguments that these false teachers use? Include the "fashionable" ones packaged for today's crop of false teachers.

False Argument	The 'Evidence' They Point To	What the Bible Says
Uniformitarianism	Things have been the same since history began with minimal changes	God destroyed the planet earlier by a worldwide flood, next time it will be by fire...and that day is fast approaching
Evolution	<i>Based on Darwin's work, a theory that life evolved over millions of years – they point to fossils of similar creatures and date them as very old</i>	<i>God created all life, and it reproduces after its own kind. Fossils may be created in a single month (Mt. St. Helen) and</i>
<i>The Earth is millions of years old</i>	<i>The geographic strata, fossils that are carbon dated as millions of years old and point to animals now extinct</i>	<i>God created the Earth and it underwent two gigantic cataclysms: Gen 1:1-2 (earth became void) and the Flood, which caused geographic formations, fossils and extinctions</i>
<i>Man is getting better and better</i>	<i>advances in science and technology, eradication of diseases, advanced medicine, space travel, etc.</i>	<i>man is inherently evil and even when he is placed in the Millennium with long life, full prosperity, no sickness and no Satan, he still is evil and blows it.</i>
<i>Man is the ultimate power in the universe</i>	<i>No real hard evidence of life on other planets</i>	<i>God is the ultimate power since He created and sustains the universe</i>

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Verses 5-7: For this they willfully forget: that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of water and in the water, 6 by which the world that then existed perished, being flooded with water. 7 But the heavens and the earth which are now preserved by the same word, are reserved for fire until the Day of Judgment and perdition of ungodly men.

§ The pre-Flood antediluvians wanted God to depart (Job 21:14) and it is the same for these people

today Job 21:14 NKJV: Yet they say to God, 'Depart from us, For we do not desire the knowledge of Your ways...'

§ earth - *ge* *The earth and its occupants*

§ world - *kosmos* *The order of things, orderly arrangement, world order*

§ willfully forget - *thelontas* determine, decide to, will to *lanthanei* lie hid, be unaware of

§ in this case, ignorance is a reresponse to the will of the 'forgetter,' a decision to forget

§ Psalm 14:1 and 53:1 (NKJV): The fool has said in his heart, "There is no God."

Q6: What light does Romans 1 shed on why they choose to forget?

Because they do not want to be accountable to a God, for if they were accountable, they would have to admit that they were wrong, compounding error upon error in their thinking until they have become a total mess. Romans 1 is an argument for the evolution of wrong thinking!

Q7: What argument does the 2 Peter text suggest you should use with an atheist?

An atheist does not believe there is a God (the term atheist in Greek is ignoramus). Ask them to prove it, which they will give you some kind of logical reasoning. Follow up with the statement, in order to prove it, you must know everything ... do you?

By the same trail of logic, they are condemned, because they cannot prove it without admitting to knowing everything there is to know!

§ the Word of God - *Theou logo* *God's Logos or Word; Jesus Christ*

Same as in John 1:1: In the beginning as the Logos...

§ preserved - *thesarizo*

Kept in store, treasured up, heaped up, amassed or reserved

Q8: How do verses 5-7 refute the argument that while God may have initiated creation, but He doesn't intervene in the day-to-day affairs of mankind?

*Here it says that God created the earth and heavens, flooded it to judge it, and **keeps it** (preserves it) until such time as he will again deal with the earth through a judgment of fire.*

The process of preserving the earth is interesting. Particle physicists can explain that opposite particle attract one another (positive and negatively charged particles), but cannot explain what holds all of the positrons together. Positrons make up the nucleus of all matter, and somehow they are held together.

We need look only at Scripture for the answer:

Colossians 1:15-20 NIV

He is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn over all creation. 16 For by him all things were created: things in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or powers or rulers or authorities; all things were created by him and for him. 17 He is before all things, and in him all things hold together. 18 And he is the head of the body, the church; he is the beginning and the firstborn from among the dead, so that in everything he might have the supremacy. 19 For God was pleased to have all his fullness dwell in him, 20 and through him to reconcile to himself all things, whether things on earth or things in heaven, by making peace through his blood, shed on the cross.

Key point: there is no heresy that the Holy Spirit has not already anticipated, for which He has provided an answer to in Scripture. How well do you know whereto find them?

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*



As you travel the road of life, do you look back at where you've come from, and look forward with anticipation with what you know lies just ahead?

26. Looking Back and Looking Ahead

2 Peter 3:8-13 NKJV

But, beloved, do not forget this one thing, that with the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. 9 The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some count slackness, but is longsuffering toward us, not willing that any should perish but that all should come to repentance. 10 But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, in which the heavens will pass away with a great noise, and the elements will melt with fervent heat; both the earth and the works that are in it will be burned up. 11 Therefore, since all these things will be dissolved, what manner of persons ought you to be in holy conduct and godliness, 12 looking for and hastening the coming of the day of God, because of which the heavens will be dissolved, being on fire, and the elements will melt with fervent heat? 13 Nevertheless we, according to His promise, look for new heavens and a new earth in which righteousness dwells.

§ God: *1 day = 1000 years* is not a cal Calculation but a meta metaphor
Much harm has been done with trying to make this into a predictive calculation

Psalm 90:1-12 NKJV – A prayer of Moses

Lord, You have been our dwelling place in all generations. 2 Before the mountains were brought forth, or ever You had formed the earth and the world, even from everlasting to everlasting, You are God. 3 You turn man to destruction, and say, "Return, O children of men." 4 For a thousand years in Your sight are like yesterday when it is past, and like a watch in the night. 5 You carry them away like a flood; they are like a sleep. In the morning they are like grass which grows up; 6 In the morning it flourishes and grows up; in the evening it is cut down and withers. 7 For we have been consumed by Your anger, and by Your wrath we are terrified. 8 You have set our iniquities before You, our secret sins in the light of Your countenance. 9 For all our days have passed away in Your wrath; we finish our years like a sigh. 10 The days of our lives are seventy years; and if by reason of strength they are eighty years, yet their boast is only labor and sorrow; for it is soon cut off, and we fly away. 11 Who knows the power of Your anger? For as the fear of You, so is Your wrath. 12 So teach us to number our days, that we may gain a heart of wisdom.

Q1: Using the contextual background of Moses' psalm, what is Peter directing us to consider in 3:8 above?

*Like Ecclesiastes, Moses' psalm directs us to understand the futility of life without God. False teachers will walk down the very same road of futility as they invent new ways of wrong thinking. In the end, God provides us a smorgasbord of days in order for us to reach the conclusion that God's way is the only way. In the end, it is all about using our time to gain a heart of wisdom...and that is the milestones we should be seeking: **to grow in wisdom as we grow up in Christ.***

Ü explain... Some Facts About Time Worthy of Our Consideration

- § Time is a physical property. It is NOT linear, NOT uniform and NOT absolute.
- § Time varies with mass, acceleration and gravity. It is slowing down as a result of the curse.
- § Eternity is not having a lot of time, but being outside time altogether.
- § God inhabits eternity (Isaiah 57:7)
- § God authenticates these facts by writing prophecy to us in advance in our time domain...

§ slack - *bradunei*

Slow, tardy; implies being dull or being a sluggard as the reason behind the slowness

Q2: What is the promise in which God is not slack?

That He will judge this planet and all evil upon and in it, and will call an end to the time domain to usher in an eternity where all evil is forever separated away from Him, and all those who have chosen Him will dwell with Him. He shall be their God, and they shall be His people...

Q3: Why does God appear slack to those who judge Him so? What is the reason behind his apparent slackness?

Because people set up these silly little challenges: if God is real, then why doesn't He just do "X" right now? And when he doesn't (as if we could order Him to) they say: see, there is no God. God has his own timetable, which includes a maximum harvest of believers. He keeps on giving time to allow more and more to be saved...

In the end, God doesn't get what He wants: all to repent and none to perish. Sovereign God can do whatever He wants. The problem is not His sovereignty, but ours...

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Two very disturbing questions to ask yourself:

- § *At what point does God decide to not keep rescuing me from my misused sovereignty and instead abandon me to the natural consequences of my own choices?*
- § *Am I presuming too much on His grace?*

Verse 10: But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, in which the heavens will pass away with a great noise, and the elements will melt with fervent heat; both the earth and the works that are in it will be burned up.

Q4: Based on the context of verse 10, who specifically will be surprised at the Day of the Lord (coming like a thief in the night)?

Those who are the false teachers, scoffers, etc.

Q5: What additional insights about this topic can you glean from the verses below?

- § *The sons of darkness will be surprised by His coming – the thief in the night analogy applies only to those who are in darkness*
- § *They will be proclaiming peace and other global topics and be caught by surprise*
- § *They shall not escape His coming, which this time will be in judgment*
- § *The sons of light (believers) will not be surprised by His coming, because they are awaiting it – I.e.; they are not caught unaware*
- § *Those who are believers will be spared the wrath of God on that day, while those who are unbelievers will fall in judgment*



Thieves usually don't make an appointment with you to break in...

1 Thessalonians 5:1-10 NKJV

But concerning the times and the seasons, brethren, you have no need that I should write to you. 2 For you yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so comes as a thief in the night. 3 For when they say, "Peace and safety!" then sudden destruction comes upon them, as labor pains upon a pregnant woman. And they shall not escape. 4 But you, brethren, are not in darkness, so that this Day should overtake you as a thief. 5 You are all sons of light and sons of the day. We are not of the night nor of darkness. 6 Therefore let us not sleep, as others do, but let us watch and be sober. 7 For those who sleep, sleep at night, and those who get drunk are drunk at night. 8 But let us who are of the day be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love, and as a helmet the hope of salvation. 9 For God did not appoint us to wrath, but to obtain salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ, 10 who died for us, that whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with Him.

§ Note that both the current h heavens (1&2) and e earth will pass away

§ heavens - *oranoi* *sky and by implication, the regions beyond the sky, and could even include the abode of God the heavens are plural, meaning more than one.*

implications to the heavens:

- § *The first heaven, our atmosphere, the abode of Satan, gets destroyed completely*
- § *The second heaven, interstellar space, gets destroyed so that at the farthest reaches, the deepest blackness can exist in which to place Gehenna – could mean the elimination of stars, galaxies, etc???*
- § *The third heaven, God's abode, is also eliminated because He will now dwell with man in the New Jerusalem as per Revelation 21 and 22...*

§ This is not just a New Testament concept -references: Isaiah 65:17 and 66:22

§ a great noise – *roizeedon* *literally, a great whirring crash*

§ melt with a fervent heat – *lutheesetai kausoumena* *to loosen, break up, melt or dissolve to set on fire*

§ earth – *ge* - the works that are in it – *erga en autee* *ge = soil or earth; erga = toil or labor or the results of one's labors*

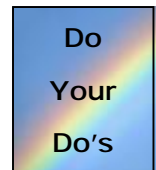
§ *will be burned up* – *katakaio* *burning down to the ground; consuming wholly*

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Q6: If the very elements melt in the great fire of judgment, with all earthly works being burned up, take a moment to write down what earthly things of yours will be burned up and what will remain.

The stuff in my life that will be burned up	The stuff in my life that will not be burned up
<p><i>- Whatever works are done on earth that are focused on earth will be consumed at this point.</i></p> <p><i>- The houses, cars, collections, bank accounts, banks will all be reduced to cinders</i></p> <p><i>Û place the approximate % of your waking hours in each box as to how you divide your time. Q: Is this where you want to be in light of the certain future of eternity?</i></p> <div style="border: 1px solid black; width: 100px; height: 30px; margin: 10px auto;"></div>	<p><i>- Therefore, the only things of lasting value (beyond The GWYJ) will already be sent ahead into eternity</i></p> <p><i>- this includes time invested in reaching the lost, in ministering to others in the name of Christ, in works done for the kingdom out of a pure heart</i></p> <div style="border: 1px solid black; width: 100px; height: 30px; margin: 10px auto;"></div>

11 Therefore, since all these things will be dissolved, what manner of persons ought you to be in holy conduct and godliness, 12 looking for and hastening the coming of the day of God, because of which the heavens will be dissolved, being on fire, and the elements will melt with fervent heat? 13 Nevertheless we, according to His promise, look for new heavens and a new earth in which righteousness dwells.



Q7: What are some specific ways that you can carry out the instructions of verse 11?

Good general question – chart the answers – do your do's!

§ looking for - *prosdokoontas* *Be in expectation, watch, anticipate, await, look forward to something specific*

§ hastening - *speudontas* *Speed, urge on diligently and earnestly, make haste unto*

Q8: Explain how, as mature Christians, we can “hasten” the return of Jesus Christ.

This may seem like a very odd statement, but consider the many ways that God enlists His people in His work. We hasten His return every time:

§ *We pray the Lord's Prayer – “Thy kingdom come”*

§ *We bodily declare His Word by DEED and what we say*

§ *We help bring another unbeliever to faith – there is a specific number of gentiles right now that have to believe in order for Christ to return – Romans 11:25-26 25 I do not want you to be ignorant of this mystery, brothers, so that you may not be conceited: Israel has experienced a hardening in part until the Û full number of the Gentiles has come in. NIV*

§ Do not think it unusual that God has us play a part, just as he had Moses (an octogenarian) play a part in delivering Israel out of bondage, John (an octogenarian) play a part in writing down Revelation, Amos (a pig farmer) record a book of prophecy...read Hebrews' Hall of Faith account of the folks that God used to advance His kingdom



1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*



While only God knows when the full number of Gentiles will come in, to trigger the Return of the Son, by sitting idly by and not doing anything we are grossly disobedient:

Luke 19:11-13 KJV

And as they heard these things, He added and spoke a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they thought that the kingdom of God should immediately appear.

12 He said therefore, "A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. 13 And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, occupy till I come."

§ occupy - *pragmateus* **to trade, transact, do business, be busy working at an assigned task with an objective of being productive with an output**

Nobleman	<i>Jesus Christ</i>
Far country	<i>Heaven</i>
Kingdom	<i>Earth and all things</i>
Ten servants	<i>Christians entrusted with occupying until return</i>
Ten pounds	<i>What he gives us to work with</i>
Occupy	<i>Transact His business</i>

Has God used this study to convict you about getting serious and growing up as a Christian? Then take a few moments and write down a sincere prayer from your heart, asking Him to show you the specific things that you need to be doing in order to occupy until He returns. Ask Him to help you do this and to guide you in this process...

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*



27. Writing The Final Chapters of Your Life

2 Peter 3:14-18 NKJV

Therefore, beloved, looking forward to these things, be diligent to be found by Him in peace, without spot and blameless; 15 and consider that the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation — as also our beloved brother Paul, according to the wisdom given to him, has written to you, 16 as also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things, in which are some things hard to understand, which untaught and unstable people twist to their own destruction, as they do also the rest of the Scriptures.

17 You therefore, beloved, since you know this beforehand, beware lest you also fall from your own steadfastness, being led away with the error of the wicked; 18 but grow in the grace and knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. To Him be the glory both now and forever. Amen.

Peter was approaching the end of his life when he penned these last words. In a very short time he knew he would be led to the place of his execution, and like Christ, his thoughts were for those who would follow...

§ You cannot affect your yes yesterdays but you can absolutely change to today and to tomorrow

Q1: In what ways can a mature Christian use the certainty of what lies ahead to deal with the uncertainty that lies ahead?

This passage calls for us to find the balance between the certainty that all things will be made right with the uncertainty (to us, not to God) of what lies immediately around the corner. We know – if we’ve accepted Jesus as our Lord and Savior – what will happen after we die. What we don’t know is the number or and route of the steps we take between now and then. But God knows, and says that He will never leave us or forsake us. So we are called upon to use that certainty to help us through the day to day uncertainties, committing EVERY step we take to Him.

Q2: What things are we to be looking forward to (verse 14a)?

His return and the fact that one day He will set everything right, as it should be, and stop the madness that shouldn’t be. This does not mean that we are to sit idly by (remember...OCCUPY TIL I COME) but it does mean that we are to be using the fact (TRUST!!!) that He will do these things to motivate us to not get weirded out by all of the unexpected things we will face along life’s journey...

Q3: Specifically, what does it mean to be found by Him in peace, without spot and blameless (v14b)?

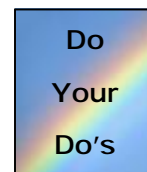
Three parts:

- § *To be at peace – with God and with our fellow believers*
- § *Without spot – as a result of living a godly life with godly conduct*
- § *Blameless – we put on His righteousness because ours will never be good enough*

Q4: What does it mean to *consider that the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation?*

While we may, as we get older, tire of all of the injustice and heartache of life in the current world we live in, the fact that God has delayed His return for centuries has afforded people the opportunity to come to know Him and be saved. If God decided to return in 1907, none of us would be going to heaven, because we would not have been born and been given the opportunity to choose life! So while we may moan and groan about “Why doesn’t He do something (which is much like the Israelites grumbling about their wilderness ‘adventure’ – and end it all, to end it would prematurely end it for those who might believe tomorrow, or next year. We must trust that he has perfect timing to call an end to this age!

Fact: God is seldom early but He is never late!



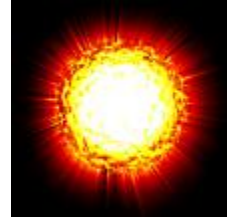
1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Verses 15-16: and consider that the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation — as also our beloved brother Paul, according to the wisdom given to him, has written to you, 16 as also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things, in which are some things hard to understand, which untaught and unstable people twist to their own destruction, as they do also the rest of the Scriptures.

§ This passage appears to authenticate Paul's writing of the epistle to the Hebrews because:

- There are no other writings of his to the Jews (like 1 & 2 Peter), and which
- Corroborate the eschatological truths of 2 Peter 3:10-13 in Hebrews 12:25-29
- Hebrews 12:25-29 NKJV

See that you do not refuse Him who speaks. For if they did not escape who refused Him who spoke on earth, much more shall we not escape if we turn away from Him who speaks from heaven, 26 whose voice then shook the earth; but now He has promised, saying, "Yet once more I shake not only the earth, but also heaven." 27 Now this, "Yet once more," indicates the removal of those things that are being shaken, as of things that are made, that the things which cannot be shaken may remain. 28 Therefore, since we are receiving a kingdom which cannot be shaken, let us have grace, by which we may serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear. 29 For our God is a consuming fire.



- Yet another example of Scripture val validating itself and its per perfect design!
AND anticipating each heretical argument against itself!

§ untaught and unstable people – you cannot understand Scripture without The Holy Spirit
1 Corinthians 2:14 NKJV But the natural man does not receive the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness to him; nor can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

§ twist to their own destruction: if you torture the data long enough It will admit to anything

What these false teachers are doing is twisting the Scriptures to fit their own point of view. They do this to the destruction of those who listen and believe them, as well as to their own ultimate destruction, when they are called to give an account of themselves in the GWTJ. They will pay the ultimate price for these things – unless they repent and turn to the truth from their lies...

§ a directive for maturing believers to exercise d due dil diligence in knowing the Scriptures

Verse 17: You therefore, beloved, since you know this beforehand, beware lest you also fall from your own steadfastness, being led away with the error of the wicked;

§ beware - phulasso *to keep watch, to observe and obey, to keep a trust (or keep yourself from)*

- presuming that you already have it all figured out is a sure barrier to le learning and therefore growing, and is not the mark of a hu humble, mature believer.

§ a warning not to be sed seduced by the allure of things not of God

§ no one will ever fail if he keeps his eyes fixed on J Jesus Christ (you cannot serve 2 masters)

§ serious doctrinal error is often connected with some kind of mo moral fai failure

Q5: Why would Peter give such a stern warning? How is he uniquely qualified to give us this warning?

Peter knows well how easy it is, under the pressure of the moment, to fail in your steadfastness. Peter himself declared that he would never forsake Jesus Christ, and even if everyone else did, he would stick by Him. Recall his bragging about this (Matthew 26:33-35, Mark 14:27-31; Luke 22:31-34; John 13:36-38). Yet he did the very thing that he boasted he would not do within just 12 hours! Knowing this, he also knows the days of heartache spent will in a 'no-longer-a-disciple state', and Jesus' charge to him as he was reinstated.

Peter's first-hand experience with falling from one's own steadfast position is for our learning and benefit, and we should use that experience to:

1. *help us avoid falling, and*
2. *know that if we do fall, restoration is available (and desired by our Lord)*

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Verse 18: ...but grow in the grace and knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. To Him be the glory both now and forever. Amen.

Grace is:

§ a free gift from God (Ephesians 2:8 NKJV: For by grace you have been saved through faith, and that not of yourselves; it is the gift of God, not of works lest anyone should boast)

§ our resp *response* to God's offer

§ not of our works, but of God's finished work - why?

Because grace + anything is no longer grace! Jesus accomplished it all on the cross...we did nothing to earn it, deserve it (that would be wages)...

Q6: How do you explain this seeming contradiction between Peter's directive to grow in the grace of Jesus Christ with the fact that God is the one who supplies grace to us?

This directive should catch our attention, because of its seeming contradiction to grow in (our work) something that God supplies (His work). However we would not be directed to do something that we could not do...so this leaves us with needing to dig for the answer.

We originally got grace as we accepted the free gift of salvation. We got it by appropriating it. Thus, we must grow by appropriating it to the max.

How God Uses Grace to Grow Us:

§ Purp *purposeful* growth involves und *understanding*.

§ We are told to grow also in *knowledge* of *Jesus Christ*, which comes from diligently delving into the depths of *Scripture*.

§ God desires for us to grow into maturity, which means to get we *weaned* off the milk of the Word.

§ Do we rise up early daily to build onto a fai *faithful* foun *foundation* of study in the Word?

§ God uses grace to place us into specific circ *circumstances* for our growth, causing us to be stre *stretched* by those circumstances and the people with whom He surrounds us.

§ If we believe God does this for our good, then do we l *look* for the growth op *opportunities* in e *every* difficult circumstance, or do we whine instead?

§ Do we p *pray* before we do, or do we do and want Him to just b *bless* it?

§ Do we seek His gui *guidance* in EVERYTHING, or just when we get ourselves into tr *trouble*?

§ Do we do ALL THINGS as if we were doing it for an aud *audience* on One?

It is always God's grace that makes up the gap between the very best that we can do and what needs to be done. When we've done our part, He will do His part. We are to be actively engaged until He returns.

It is high time to grow up, Christian!

Doxology: To Him be the glory both now and forever. Amen.



A Christian should grow 'like a tree:'
 - grow up in grace
 - grow deep roots in the Scriptures
 - grow out in fellowship with others.
 This is what is meant by GROWING UP into maturity as a believer.

1 Peter 2:2: *Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)*

Appendix 1

Peter in the Apostolic Church

By Chuck Missler, a Commentary on the Books of I & II Peter ©1997 Koinonia House

The Book of Acts shows the Great Commission in exercise. Before Pentecost it is Peter who takes the lead in the community (Acts 1:15ff); afterwards, he is the principal preacher (2:14ff; 3:12ff), the spokesman before the Jewish authorities (4:8ff), the president in the administration of discipline (5:3ff). Though the Church as a whole made a deep impression on the community, it was to Peter in particular that supernatural powers were attributed (5:15). In Samaria, the Church's first mission field, the same leadership is exercised (8:14ff).

Significantly also, he is the first apostle to be associated with the Gentile mission, and that by unmistakably providential means (10:1ff; cf. 15:7ff). This immediately brings criticism upon him (11:2ff); and not for the last time. Gal. 2:11ff gives us a glimpse of Peter at Antioch, the first church with a significant ex-pagan element, sharing table-fellowship with the Gentile converts, and then meeting a barrage of Jewish-Christian position, in the face of which he withdraws. This defection was roundly denounced by Paul; but there is no hint of any theological difference between them, and Paul's complaint is rather the incompatibility of Peter's practice with his theory. The old theory (revived by S. G. F. Brandon, *The Fall of Jerusalem and the Christian Church*, 1951), of persistent rivalry between Paul and Peter, has little basis in the documents.

Despite this lapse, the Gentile mission had no truer friend than Peter. Paul's gospel and his had the same content, though a somewhat different expression: the Petrine speeches in Acts, Mark's Gospel and 1 Peter have the same theology of the Cross, rooted in the concept of Christ as the suffering Servant. He was ready with the right hand of fellowship, recognizing his mission to Jews and Paul's to Gentiles as part of the same ministry (Gal. 2:7ff); and at the Jerusalem Council is recorded as the first to urge the full acceptance of the Gentiles on faith alone (Acts 15:7ff).

Peter's career after the death of Stephen is hard to trace. The references to him in Joppa, Caesarea and elsewhere suggest that he undertook missionary work in Palestine (James no doubt now assuming leadership in Jerusalem). He was imprisoned in Jerusalem, and on his miraculous escape he left for "another place" (Acts 12:17). Attempts to identify this place are fruitless. We know that he went to Antioch (Gal 2:11ff); he may have gone to Corinth, though probably not for long (1 Cor 1:12). He is closely associated with Christians in N Asia Minor (1 Pet 1:1), and possibly the prohibition on Paul's entry into Bithynia (Acts 16:7) was due to the fact that Peter was at work there.

Peter's residence in Rome has been disputed, but on insufficient grounds. 1 Peter was almost certainly written from there (1 Pet 5:13). That book shows signs of being written just before or during the Neronian persecution, and 1 *Clement* 5 implies that, like Paul, he died in this outburst. Doubts cast on the interpretation of 1 *Clement* (cf. M. Smith, *NTS* 9, 1960, pp. 86ff) have little foundation. On the other hand, Cullmann's suggestion, based on the context in 1 *Clement* and Paul's hints in Philippians of tensions in the church at Rome, that Peter, perhaps at Paul's request, came specifically to heal the breach, and that bitterness among Christians led to the death of both, is worth serious consideration. The story in the *Acts of Peter* of his martyrdom by crucifixion (cf. Jn. 21:18ff) head downwards cannot be accepted as reliable, but this work may preserve some valid traditions.

The Gospel of Mark?

The earliest statement about the origin of this Gospel is that given by Papias (preserved in Eusebius, *EH* 3. 39): "Mark, who was the interpreter of Peter, wrote down accurately all that he remembered, whether of sayings or doings of Christ, but not in order. For he was neither a hearer nor a companion of the Lord; but afterwards, he accompanied Peter, who adapted his instruction as necessity required, not as though he were making a compilation of the Lord's oracles. So then Mark made no mistake when he wrote down thus some things as he remembered them; for he concentrated on this alone—not to omit anything that he had heard, nor to include any false statement among them.

"Papias" information (c. AD 140) is amplified a generation or so later in the anti-Marcionite prologue to Mark and in Irenaeus. The anti-Marcionite prologue, only part of which has survived, says that Mark "was called 'stumpy-fingered' (*kolobodaktylos*) because his fingers were short in relation to the rest of his body; he was Peter's interpreter, and after Peter's departure he committed his Gospel to writing in the parts of Italy."

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Irenaeus (*Adv. Haer.* 3. 1. 1), after referring to Mark as having been written “when Peter and Paul were preaching the gospel in Rome and founding the church there,” adds that “after their departure (*exodos*) Mark, Peter’s disciple, has himself delivered to us in writing the substance of Peter’s preaching.” Both of these authorities therefore suggest a date shortly after Peter’s death, though later Fathers claim, perhaps tendentiously, that it was written in Peter’s lifetime.

Mark’s Gospel has sometimes been popularly called Peter’s Gospel (to be distinguished from later heretical works with this or similar titles), not only because of the evidence of these 2nd century writers but also since, even if the hand be Mark’s, the voice is Peter’s voice, to judge from the nature of the incidents, choice of matter, and manner of treatment. It may thus be no empty tradition that this is the written record of the preaching of Peter, originally delivered to Christian catechumens, whether at Rome, or in the Greek East, and reduced to writing either on the death of its oral source or when the death became imminent.

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Appendix 2

STONE and ROCK in Scripture

Although the Bible has 66 books penned by forty different writers over several thousand years, it has one Author, the Holy Spirit. A careful study of the Bible reveals that the Holy Spirit uses certain idioms consistently throughout Scripture. Following are excerpts of Scriptures (NKJV) containing "stone" and "rock."

Genesis 49:24

But his bow remained in strength, and the arms of his hands were made strong by the hands of the Mighty God of Jacob (From there is the Shepherd, the Stone of Israel),

Exodus 17:5-6

And the LORD said to Moses, "Go on before the people, and take with you some of the elders of Israel. Also take in your hand your rod with which you struck the river, and go. 6 Behold, I will stand before you there on the rock in Horeb; and you shall strike the rock, and water will come out of it, that the people may drink."

Deuteronomy 32:3-4

For I proclaim the name of the LORD: Ascribe greatness to our God. 4 He is the Rock, His work is perfect; for all His ways are justice, a God of truth and without injustice; righteous and upright is He.

Deuteronomy 32:15-18

Then he forsook God who made him, and scornfully esteemed the Rock of his salvation. 16 They provoked Him to jealousy with foreign gods; with abominations they provoked Him to anger. 17 They sacrificed to demons, not to God, to gods they did not know, to new gods, new arrivals that your fathers did not fear. 18 Of the Rock who begot you, you are unmindful, and have forgotten the God who fathered you.

Deuteronomy 32:30-31

30 How could one chase a thousand, and two put ten thousand to flight, unless their Rock had sold them, and the LORD had surrendered them? 31 For their rock is not like our Rock, even our enemies themselves being judges.

1 Samuel 2:2

"No one is holy like the LORD, for there is none besides You, nor is there any rock like our God.

2 Samuel 22:2-4

2 And he said: "The LORD is my rock and my fortress and my deliverer; 3 The God of my strength, in whom I will trust; my shield and the horn of my salvation, my stronghold and my refuge; my Savior, You save me from violence. 4 I will call upon the LORD, who is worthy to be praised; so shall I be saved from my enemies.

2 Samuel 22:31-33

31 As for God, His way is perfect; the word of the LORD is proven; He is a shield to all who trust in Him. 32 "For who is God, except the LORD? And who is a rock, except our God? 33 God is my strength and power, and He makes my way perfect.

2 Samuel 22:47

47 "The LORD lives! Blessed be my Rock! Let God be exalted, the Rock of my salvation!

2 Samuel 23:2-3

"The Spirit of the LORD spoke by me, and His word was on my tongue. 3 The God of Israel said, the Rock of Israel spoke to me: 'He who rules over men must be just, ruling in the fear of God.

Job 29:5-6

5 When the Almighty was yet with me, when my children were around me; 6 When my steps were bathed with cream, and the rock poured out rivers of oil for me!

Psalms 18:2

The LORD is my rock and my fortress and my deliverer; my God, my strength, in whom I will trust; my shield and the horn of my salvation, my stronghold.

Psalms 18:31

For who is God, except the LORD? and who is a rock, except our God?

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Psalm 18:46

The LORD lives! Blessed be my Rock! Let the God of my salvation be exalted.

Psalm 27:5

For in the time of trouble He shall hide me in His pavilion; In the secret place of His tabernacle He shall hide me; He shall set me high upon a rock.

Psalm 28:1

To You I will cry, O LORD my Rock: Do not be silent to me, lest, if You are silent to me, I become like those who go down to the pit.

Psalm 31:1-3

In You, O LORD, I put my trust; let me never be ashamed; deliver me in Your righteousness. 2 Bow down Your ear to me, deliver me speedily; be my rock of refuge, a fortress of defense to save me. 3 For You are my rock and my fortress; therefore, for Your name's sake, lead me and guide me.

Psalm 40:2

He also brought me up out of a horrible pit, out of the miry clay, and set my feet upon a rock, and established my steps.

Psalm 42:9

I will say to God my Rock...

Psalm 61:2

From the end of the earth I will cry to You, when my heart is overwhelmed; lead me to the rock that is higher than I.

Psalm 62:2

He only is my rock and my salvation; He is my defense; I shall not be greatly moved.

Psalm 62:5-7

My soul, wait silently for God alone, for my expectation is from Him. 6 He only is my rock and my salvation; He is my defense; I shall not be moved. 7 In God is my salvation and my glory; the rock of my strength, and my refuge, is in God.

Psalm 71:3

Be my strong refuge, to which I may resort continually; You have given the commandment to save me, for You are my rock and my fortress.

Psalm 78:16,20

He also brought streams out of the rock, and caused waters to run down like rivers. 20 Behold, He struck the rock, so that the waters gushed out, and the streams overflowed.

Psalm 78:35

Then they remembered that God was their rock, and the Most High God their Redeemer.

Psalm 89:26-27

He shall cry to Me, 'You are my Father, my God, and the rock of my salvation.' 27 Also I will make him My firstborn, the highest of the kings of the earth.

Psalm 92:15

To declare that the LORD is upright; He is my rock, and there is no unrighteousness in Him.

Psalm 94:22

But the LORD has been my defense, and my God the rock of my refuge.

Psalm 95:1

Oh come, let us sing to the LORD! Let us shout joyfully to the Rock of our salvation.

Psalm 114:8

Who turned the rock into a pool of water, the flint into a fountain of waters.

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Psalm 118:21-24

I will praise You, for You have answered me, and have become my salvation. 22 The stone which the builders rejected has become the chief cornerstone. 23 This was the LORD's doing; it is marvelous in our eyes. 24 This is the day the LORD has made; We will rejoice and be glad in it.

Psalm 144:1

Blessed be the LORD my Rock , who trains my hands for war, and my fingers for battle —

Isaiah 8:13-14

The LORD of hosts, Him you shall hallow; let Him be your fear, and let Him be your dread. 14 He will be as a sanctuary, but a stone of stumbling and a rock of offense to both the houses of Israel, as a trap and a snare to the inhabitants of Jerusalem.

Isaiah 17:10

Because you have forgotten the God of your salvation, and have not been mindful of the Rock of your stronghold...

Isaiah 28:16

Therefore thus says the Lord GOD: "Behold, I lay in Zion a stone for a foundation, a tried stone, a precious cornerstone, a sure foundation; whoever believes will not act hastily.

Isaiah 44:8

Do not fear, nor be afraid; have I not told you from that time, and declared it? You are My witnesses. Is there a God besides Me? Indeed there is no other Rock; I know not one."

Isaiah 48:20-21

Say, "The LORD has redeemed His servant Jacob!" 21 And they did not thirst when He led them through the deserts; He caused the waters to flow from the rock for them; He also split the rock, and the waters gushed out.

Isaiah 51:1

"Listen to Me, you who follow after righteousness, you who seek the LORD: Look to the rock from which you were hewn...

Daniel 2:34-35, 44-45

You watched while a stone was cut out without hands, which struck the image on its feet of iron and clay, and broke them in pieces. 35 Then the iron, the clay, the bronze, the silver, and the gold were crushed together, and became like chaff from the summer threshing floors; the wind carried them away so that no trace of them was found. And the stone that struck the image became a great mountain and filled the whole earth. 44 And in the days of these kings the God of heaven will set up a kingdom which shall never be destroyed; and the kingdom shall not be left to other people; it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand forever. 45 Inasmuch as you saw that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and that it broke in pieces the iron, the bronze, the clay, the silver, and the gold — the great God has made known to the king what will come to pass after this. The dream is certain, and its interpretation is sure."

Habakkuk 1:12

Are You not from everlasting, O LORD my God, my Holy One? We shall not die. O LORD, You have appointed them for judgment; O Rock, You have marked them for correction.

Zechariah 3:8-9

'Hear, O Joshua, the high priest, you and your companions who sit before you, for they are a wondrous sign; for behold, I am bringing forth My Servant the BRANCH. 9 For behold, the stone that I have laid before Joshua: Upon the stone are seven eyes. Behold, I will engrave its inscription,' says the LORD of hosts, 'and I will remove the iniquity of that land in one day.

Matthew 7:24-25

"Therefore whoever hears these sayings of Mine, and does them, I will liken him to a wise man who built his house on the rock: 25 and the rain descended, the floods came, and the winds blew and beat on that house; and it did not fall, for it was founded on the rock.

Matthew 16:18-19

And I also say to you that you are Peter, and on this rock I will build My church, and the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it.

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Matthew 21:42-44

Jesus said to them, "Have you never read in the Scriptures: 'The stone which the builders rejected has become the chief cornerstone. This was the LORD's doing, and it is marvelous in our eyes'? 43 "Therefore I say to you, the kingdom of God will be taken from you and given to a nation bearing the fruits of it. 44 And whoever falls on this stone will be broken; but on whomever it falls, it will grind him to powder."

Mark 12:10-11

Have you not even read this Scripture: 'The stone which the builders rejected has become the chief cornerstone. 11 This was the LORD's doing, and it is marvelous in our eyes?'"

Luke 6:48

He is like a man building a house, who dug deep and laid the foundation on the rock . And when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently against that house, and could not shake it, for it was founded on the rock.

Luke 20:17-18

Then He looked at them and said, "What then is this that is written: 'The stone which the builders rejected has become the chief cornerstone'? 18 Whoever falls on that stone will be broken; but on whomever it falls, it will grind him to powder."

Acts 4:10-12

...let it be known to you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom you crucified, whom God raised from the dead, by Him this man stands here before you whole. 11 This is the 'stone which was rejected by you builders, which has become the chief cornerstone.' 12 Nor is there salvation in any other, for there is no other name under heaven given among men by which we must be saved."

Romans 9:32-33

Why? Because they did not seek it by faith, but as it were, by the works of the law. For they stumbled at that stumbling stone. 33 As it is written: "Behold, I lay in Zion a stumbling stone and rock of offense, and whoever believes on Him will not be put to shame."

1 Corinthians 10:1-4

Moreover, brethren, I do not want you to be unaware that all our fathers were under the cloud, all passed through the sea, 2 all were baptized into Moses in the cloud and in the sea, 3 all ate the same spiritual food, 4 and all drank the same spiritual drink. For they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them, and that Rock was Christ.

Ephesians 2:19-22

Now, therefore, you are no longer strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints and members of the household of God, 20 having been built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ Himself being the chief cornerstone, 21 in whom the whole building, being fitted together, grows into a holy temple in the Lord, 22 in whom you also are being built together for a dwelling place of God in the Spirit.

1 Peter 2:4-8

Coming to Him as to a living stone, rejected indeed by men, but chosen by God and precious, 5 you also, as living stones, are being built up a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ. 6 Therefore it is also contained in the Scripture, "Behold, I lay in Zion a chief cornerstone, elect, precious, and he who believes on Him will by no means be put to shame." 7 Therefore, to you who believe, He is precious; but to those who are disobedient, "The stone which the builders rejected has become the chief cornerstone," 8 and "A stone of stumbling and a rock of offense."

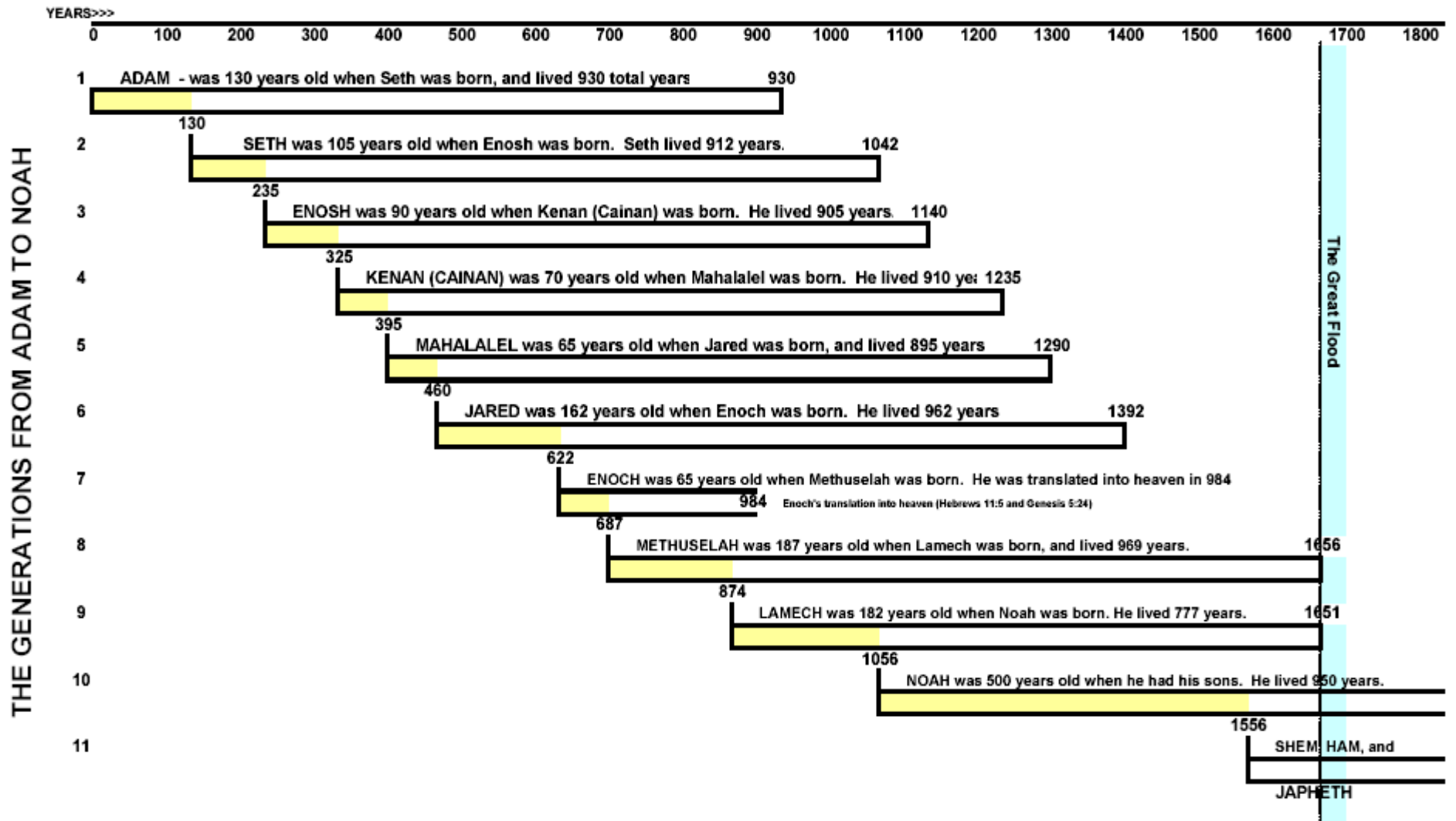
Revelation 2:17

"He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes I will give some of the hidden manna to eat. And I will give him a white stone, and on the stone a new name written which no one knows except him who receives it."

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Appendix 3 - Timeline for the "Days of Noah"

THE FIRST TEN GENTILE PATRIARCHS: THE GENERATIONS OF ADAM (GENESIS 5)
The time line of years and the generations of Adam through Noah, showing the 1656 years before the Great Flood



1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

THE GENERATIONS OF ADAM

THE FIRST TEN GENTILE PATRIARCHS OF THE BIBLE (GENESIS 4:25 - 5:32)

II Timothy 3:16 "All Scripture is given by inspiration of God and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness."

Generation	English	Hebrew	Strong's Number(s)	Meaning of the Name	Primary Scripture Reference	Related Scripture Reference	Notes:
0	Adam	'adam	119,121,121 127	man, ruddy, rosy to show blood in the face to flush	Gen. 2:7 Gen. 5:1-3		Hebrew root word meaning to show blood in the face, which identifies him as uniquely human. Adam was created, so he was not counted as a generation.
1	Seth	Sheth	8352, 7896	to place or appoint	Gen. 4:25 Gen. 5:3-6,8		Cain (Adam and Eve's 2nd son) murdered Abel (1st son), so God appointed Seth to be the seed that Eve expected (Gen 4:25) to carry on the Messianic line. Thus 2 lines were established: ungodly (Cain) and godly (Seth)
2	Enos	Enosh enowsh	605,582,583	a mortal, to be frail or feeble	Gen. 4:26 Gen. 5:6,7 Gen 5:9-11	Gen. 2:17	Note in Gen. 4:26 that men first began to call upon the Lord - did they then realize that their bodies were dying because of sin? (Gen 2:17) God said that the consequences of sin is death, thus this 2nd generation recognized its mortality and turned to God.
3	Cainan	Qeynan or Kenan	7018, 7064	a nest or dwelling	Gen. 5:9 Gen. 5:11-14		Adam's great grandson, whose name is derived from Hebrew root words which mean a nest, to erect, a dwelling place - all these suggest a habitation.
4	Mahalaleel	Mahala'e'l	4111, 410	praise of God Almighty God, strength	Gen. 5:12 Gen. 5:15-17	Matt 3:17	Three Hebrew root words: Ma (the) Halale (blessed), like the English word hallelujah, and El (meaning God). Hallelujah means 'Bless the Lord.' Praise of God: Mat 3:17: "This is My beloved Son, in Whom I am well pleased."
5	Jared	Yered or yarad	3382 3381	a descent to descend, to go downward, to fall to a lower region	Gen. 5:15 Gen. 5:18-20		Adam's great great great grandson (Adam was only middle aged when Jared was born) The root word yarad means "he shall come down" or "decend" as if from a region above. Jesus descended from heaven to become man, and from earth to Hades to become our Savior.
6	Enoch	Chanowk chanak	2585, 2596	to initiate, to train up, to teach, to dedicate	Gen 5:18 Gen. 5:21-24	Jude 14-15 Heb. 11:5 Prov. 22:6	Jude 14-15 notes Enoch was a prophet (the first one mentioned in the Bible) who prophesied about the coming Messiah. He is cited in Hebrews as having been translated and not seeing death. The root word of Enoch (chanak) means to teach (as in Proverbs 22:6 'train up a child')
7	Methuselah	Methuw- shelach	4968	at the end of his life the flood started "his death shall bring"	Gen. 5:21 Gen. 5:25-27	Gen. 6:7-8 Gen. 7:6, 11	In Gen. 6:7 God revealed that He would bring judgement upon the earth. If you calculate the years that Methuselah was alive, you would see that his death coincided with the start of the flood. His name would signify that "when he is gone, it shall come." Adam and his generations were alive while M was an adult.
8	Lamech	Lemek	3929	the meaning of this word is unclear opposite of Malech (king)	Gen. 5:25 Gen. 5:28-31		The meaning of Lamech is unclear, however some Hebrew authorities believe that LAMech is the oppositie of MALech, because of the way that MALech (king) has 3 letters mem (brain) lamed (heart) and kav (kidneys) [a king ruled from his heart with his intellect], while LAMech is one who has his kidneys (feelings) rule his intellect [i.e.; the opposite of MALech is LAMech, thus a captive].
9	Noah	Noach	5119, 5118, 5117	comfort, rest	Gen 5:28,29 Gen. 5:32	Gen. 6:8	Gen. 5:29 Noah is prophesied that "this same shall comfort us." Note that in opposition to Gen. 6:7, where God will judge, it says "But Noah found grace"

Connect the names of the first 10 Gentile Patriarchs (The Generations of Adam) and you get this composite message:

Man (is) appointed (a) mortal habitation , (but) the Blessed God shall descend
 0 1 2 3 4 5
teaching (that) his death shall bring (the) captives comfort
 6 7 8 9

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Appendix 4 - Sukkot: The Feast of Tabernacles

- excerpted from *Unger's Bible Dictionary*, Moody Press and *The Hebraic Heritage of Christianity* by Pari

The third of the great annual feasts, the other two being the Passover and Pentecost.

"Speak to the sons of Israel, saying, 'On the fifteenth of this seventh month is the Feast of Booths for 7 days to the L-rd.'" *Leviticus. 23:33-43*

The Feast of Tabernacles (Booths) (*Sukkot*) follows *Yom Kippur* as a time of rejoicing, of bringing in the harvest, of thanksgiving for Adonai's provision during the past year, and of remembering our wilderness experience when HaShem brought us out of Egypt and dwelt among His people. Temporary booths are constructed with materials that grow from the ground and in such a way as to allow the stars to be seen at night. The booths are then decorated with fruit and vegetables. The people were to live in these dwellings for seven days.

Another observance related to *Sukkot* involves what are known as The Four Species (*arba minim* in Hebrew) or the lulav and etrog. We are commanded to take these four plants and use them to "rejoice before the L-rd." The four species in question are an etrog (a citrus fruit native to Israel), a palm branch (in Hebrew, lulav), a myrtle branch (hadas) and a willow branch (arava). The three branches are bound together and referred to collectively as the lulav. The etrog is held separately. One recites a blessing and waives the species in six directions, symbolizing the fact that G-d is everywhere.

The four species are also held during the Hallel prayer in religious services, and are held during processions around the bimah (the table where the Torah is read) each day during the holiday. These processions commemorate similar processions around the altar of the ancient Temple in Jerusalem. The processions are known as Hoshanahs, because while the procession is made, we recite a prayer with the refrain, "Hosha na!" (please save us!). On the seventh day of *Sukkot*, seven circuits are made. For this reason, the seventh day of *Sukkot* is known as Hoshanah Rabbah (the great Hoshanah).



The four Species of Sukkot: citron (a fruit), palm branch, myrtle and willow

Many Americans, upon seeing a decorated sukkah for the first time, remark on how much the sukkah (and the holiday generally) reminds them of Thanksgiving. This is not entirely coincidental. Our American pilgrims, who originated the Thanksgiving holiday, were deeply religious people. When they were trying to find a way to express their thanks for their survival and for the harvest, they looked to the Bible for an appropriate way of celebrating and based their holiday in part on *Sukkot*.

Sukkot reminds us of how HaShem said: "And I will dwell among the sons of Israel and will be their G-d." (Ex. 29:45) and how Yeshua dwelt among us: "I will dwell in them and walk among them; And I will be their G-d, and they shall be My people". (2 Corinthians 6:16)

An important lesson of *Sukkot* is that the Holy One, Blessed Be He, intends for His people to realize a life of joy, a joy which flows out of a relationship with Him first, and then out of the relationships we have among others. *Sukkot* is indeed an important holiday and will be celebrated one day with Yeshua:

"Then it will come about that any who are left of all the nations that went against Jerusalem will go up from year to year to worship the King, the L-rd of hosts, and to celebrate the Feast of Booths...whichever of the families.....does not go up to worship the King...will be the plague..to smite the nations..." (Zechariah 14:16-19)

From Unger's Bible Dictionary...

Names. (1) The festival of Tents (Heb. hag hassukkot, "Feast of Booths," <2 Chr. 8:13; Ezra 3:4; Zech. 14:16,18-19>; Gk. skenopegia, <John 7:2>, "Feast of Booths") was so called because the Israelites were commanded to live in booths during its continuance (cf. <Lev. 23:43>). (2) The feast of Ingathering (Heb. hag ha'asip, <Exo. 23:16>, "Feast of the Harvest"; <34:22>), because it was held after the ingathering of the harvest and fruits. (3) The festival of Jehovah (Heb. hag YHWH, <Lev. 23:39>, "feast of the Lord"), or simply the festival (<1 Kin. 8:2; 2 Chr. 5:3>, "the feast"), because it was the most important or well known. The principal passages referring to this feast are <Exo. 23:16; Lev. 23:34-36; 39:43; Deut. 16:13-15; 31:10-13; Neh. 8>.

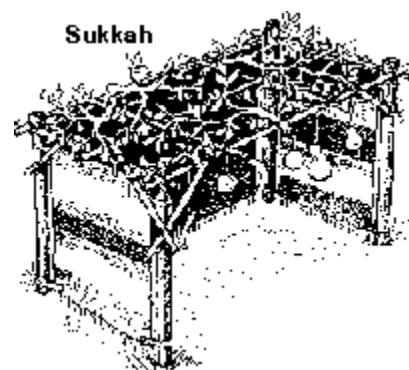
1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

Origin and Import. The origin of this feast is connected by some with Succoth, the first halting place of the Israelites on their march out of Egypt, and the booths are taken to commemorate those in which they lodged for the last time before they entered the desert. It was ordered by Moses in the regulations he gave to the Israelites respecting their festivals, and it unites two elements: the ingathering of the labor of the field <Exo. 23:16>, the fruit of the earth <Lev. 23:39>-- or the ingathering of the threshing floor and the wine press <Deut. 16:13>-- and the dwelling in booths, which were to be matters of joy to Israel <Lev. 23:41-43; Deut. 16:14>. The dwelling in booths was to be a reminder to them of the fatherly care and protection of Jehovah while Israel was journeying from Egypt to Canaan <Deut. 8:7-18>. Such a reminder of God's loving care and Israel's dependence would, naturally, keep the Israelites from pride and conceit.

Time of the Festival. It began on the 15th of Tishri (the seventh month), five days before the Day of Atonement, and although, strictly speaking, it lasted only seven days <Deut. 16:13; Lev. 23:36; Ezek. 45:25>, another day was added <Neh. 8:18>. This day was observed with a sabbatic rest.

Observance. To distinguish between the pentateuchal enactments and the rites, ceremonies, etc., that gradually developed, we divide the description of its observance into three sections: Mosaic, postexilic, and post-Dispersion.

§ **Mosaic.** On the first day of the feast, booths were constructed of fresh branches of fruit and palm trees, "boughs of leafy trees and willows." These were located in courts, streets, public squares, and on house roofs. In these all home-born Israelites were to dwell during the festival, in memory of their fathers' dwelling in booths after their exodus from Egypt <Lev. 23:40; Neh. 8:15>. The day was also to be observed as a Sabbath and a holy convocation, in which no secular work was to be done, and all able-bodied male members of the congregation not legally precluded were to appear before the Lord. The booth in Scripture is not an image of privation and misery but of protection, preservation, and shelter from heat, storm, and tempest <Pss. 27:5; 31:20; Isa. 4:6>.



Each bull, ram, and lamb was accompanied with its prescribed grain and drink offering. The above sacrifices were offered after the regular morning sacrifice <Num. 29:12-34>. Every sabbatical year the law was to be read publicly in the sanctuary on the first day of the festival <Deut. 31:10-13>. The six following days were half festivals, probably devoted to social enjoyments and friendly gatherings, when every family head was to extend hospitality, especially to the poor and the stranger <16:14>. To these seven days there was added an eighth, the twenty-second of the month, as the close of the feast. This day was observed with a sabbatic rest and holy convocation but had only a simple sacrifice, similar to the first and tenth days of the seventh month (<Num. 29:35-38>; see table 9). There is only one instance recorded of this festival's being celebrated between the entrance into the Promised Land and the Babylonian captivity <1 Kin. 8:2; 2 Chr. 7:8-10; Neh. 8:17>.

§ **Postexilic.** After the Babylonian captivity the feast of Booths began to be strictly and generally kept, and more minute definitions and more expanded applications of the concise pentateuchal injunction were imperatively demanded, in order to secure uniformity of practice, as well as to infuse devotion and joy into the celebration.

It was ordained that the booth must be a detached and temporary habitation, constructed for the festival and not for permanent residence; the interior must neither be higher than twenty cubits nor lower than ten palms; it must have not less than three walls and must be so thatched as to admit the view of the sky and the stars. The part open to the rays of the sun was not to exceed the part shaded by the cover; it must not be under a tree, or covered with a cloth or with anything that contracts defilement or does not derive its growth from the ground. The furniture of the booths must be of the plainest, and only such as was fairly necessary. Every Israelite was to dwell in the booth during the whole of the seven days of the festival, while his house was to be only his occasional abode; and he was only to quit the booth when it rained heavily. Even a child, as soon as it ceased to be dependent upon its mother, must dwell in the booth. The only persons exempt were those deputed on pious missions, invalids, nurses, women, and infants.



1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

1. The day before the feast, 14th Tishri, was the Preparation Day. On this day the pilgrims came to Jerusalem and prepared all that was necessary for the solemn observance of the festival. When evening set in, the blasts of the priests' trumpets on the Temple mount announced the advent of the feast. As at the Passover and at Pentecost, the altar of burnt offering was cleansed during the first night watch, and the Temple gates were thrown open immediately after midnight. The time until the beginning of the ordinary morning sacrifice was occupied in examining the various sacrifices and offerings that were to be brought during the day. If this day was the Sabbath all lulabs had to be deposited somewhere in the Temple, as it was contrary to law to carry the palms from the booths of the pilgrims to the Temple on the Sabbath.
2. On the first day of the feast, 15th Tishri, while the morning sacrifice was being prepared, a priest, accompanied by a joyous procession and with music, went down to the Pool of Siloam, where he drew water into a golden pitcher capable of holding three logs. On the Sabbaths the water was brought from a golden vessel in the Temple itself, to which it had been carried from Siloam the preceding day. At the same time that the procession started for Siloam, another went to a place in the Kidron Valley (i.e., Motza), to which they brought willow branches. These they stuck on either side of the great altar, bending them over so as to form a canopy. The priest who had gone to Siloam timed his return so as to join his brother priests as they carried the sacrifice to the altar. On reaching the water gate he was welcomed by three blasts of the trumpet. He ascended the steps of the altar with another priest, who carried a pitcher of wine for a drink offering. They turned to the left, where there were two silver basins with holes in the bottom; the basin for the water at the W with a narrower hole, that for the wine at the E with wider hole, so that both might empty at the same time. Into these respective basins the water and wine were poured; the people shouting to the priest, "Raise thy hand," to show that he really poured the water into the basin. The reason for this was that Alexander Jannaeus, a Sadducee (about 95 B.C.), had shown his contempt for the Pharisees by pouring the water upon the ground. He was pelted by the people with their aethrogs, and the soldiers, being called in, killed nearly six thousand Jews in the Temple.

As soon as the altar was decorated with the willow branches the morning sacrifice was offered, followed by the special festive sacrifices. While these sacrifices were being offered, the Levites chanted the Great Hallel, as at the Passover and Pentecost. When the choir came to the words "Give thanks to the Lord" <Ps. 118:1>, again when they sang, "O Lord, do save, we beseech Thee" <118:25>, and once more at the close, "Give thanks to the Lord" <118:29>, all the worshipers shook their lulabs toward the altar. The chant finished, the priests marched around the altar, exclaiming, "Hosanna, O Jehovah; give us help, O Jehovah, give prosperity" (cf. <118:25>). The benediction was then pronounced, and the people dispersed, amid the repeated exclamation "How beautiful art thou, O altar!" Or "To Jehovah and thee, O altar, we give thanks!" This prayer for succor was applied to Christ when the multitude greeted Jesus on His entry into Jerusalem <Matt. 21:8-9; John 12:12-13>.

Each pilgrim went to his booth, there to enjoy his social repast with the Levite, the stranger, etc. On the first day of the festival every Israelite carried about his lulab, or palm, all day-- to the synagogue, on his visits to the sick and mourners.

3. The second through sixth days of the feast, 16th-20th Tishri, were called also the middle days of the feast <John 7:14>, or the lesser festival. These days were half holy days, on which necessary food or raiment might be privately purchased, and work required for the observance of the festival might be performed. During these days the sacrifices were offered, the palm and the citron were used, and the priests marched around the altar as on the first day of the festival, with the exception that the number of animals offered diminished daily.
4. The seventh or the last day of the feast, fell on the 21st Tishri (but according to some authorities this title was given to the 22nd Tishri). This seventh day of the festival was distinguished from the other days as follows: after the Musaph, or special festival sacrifices of the day, the priests marched seven times around the altar instead of once, as on other days; the willows that surrounded the altar were then so thoroughly shaken by the people that the leaves lay thickly on the ground; the people also brought palm branches and beat them to pieces at the side of the altar, from which the day was called the day of willows and the branch-threshing day. This over, the children who were present threw away their palms and ate their aethrogs, or citrons; on the afternoon of this day the pilgrims began to move the furniture from the booths, the obligation to dwell in them ceasing at that time. This, the great Hosanna day, was regarded as one of the four days whereon God judges the world. It seems altogether probable that it was

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

on this day that Jesus uttered those memorable words, "If any man is thirsty, let him come to Me and drink" <John 7:37>.

5. The eighth day of the feast, 22nd Tishri, was added as the close of the festival and was observed with sabbatic rest and holy convocation. It had only a simple sacrifice (similar to the first and tenth day of the seventh month; see table 9, "Sacrifices Offered During the Feast of Booths"). The people no longer dwelt in booths, the joyful procession for the drawing of water was discontinued, the illumination of the court of the women ceased, and the palms and willows were not used.

The ceremony of drawing the water was repeated every morning during the seven days of the festival but was discontinued on the eighth.

When the feast of Booths fell on a sabbatic year, the reading of portions of the law <Deut. 31:10-13> was afterward confined to one book of the Pentateuch, the number of synagogues in which the law was read every week rendering it less needful to read extensive portions in the Temple. A peculiarity of this festival was that on the first seven days all twenty-four divisions of the priests officiated, whereas at all the other festivals only those upon whom the lot fell served (cf. <1 Chr. 24:7-19>). On the eighth day the twenty-four divisions were not all present; only those upon whom the lot fell. As the close of the first day of the feast was celebrated, the "joy of the pouring out of the water," the worshipers descended to the court of the women, where great preparations had been made. Four golden candelabra were there, each with four golden bowls, a ladder resting against each candelabra and upon them standing four sons of the priests holding pitchers of oil with which they fed the lamps, while the cast-off breeches and girdles of the priests served for wicks. The light from these lamps illuminated the whole city, and around them danced men with lighted torches in their hands, singing hymns and songs of praise. The Levites, stationed on the fifteen steps that led into the court, corresponding to the fifteen psalms of degrees, i.e., steps (<Pss. 120-134>, "ascents"), accompanied the songs with harps, lyres, cymbals, and other musical instruments. The dancing, as well as the music, continued until daybreak. It is probable that Jesus referred to this custom when He spoke those well-known words "I am the light of the world" <John 8:12>.

§ Since the Dispersion. Except for the adaptation of the rites to the altered condition of the nation, the Jews of the present day continue to celebrate the feast of Booths as in the days of the second Temple.

As soon as the Day of Atonement is over, every orthodox Jew begins to erect the booth in which he and his family are to take up their abode during the festival, and he also provides himself with a lulab (palm) and aethrog (citron). The festival commences on the eve of 14th Tishri (Preparation Day). All the Jews, attired in festive garments, resort to the synagogues, where, after the evening prayer, the hallowed nature of the festival is proclaimed by the cantor in the blessing pronounced over the wine. After the evening service every family goes to its booth, which is illuminated and adorned with leaves and fruit and in which the first festive meal is taken. Before this is eaten, the head of the family pronounces the sanctity of the festival over a cup of wine. Each member of the family washes his hands, pronouncing the prescribed benediction while drying them, and all begin to eat. Orthodox Jews sleep in the booths all night.

The following morning, the first day of the feast, they go to the synagogue, holding the palms and citrons in their hands, laying them down during the former part of the prayer, but taking them up after the eighteen benedictions, when about to recite the Hallel. Holding the palm in the right hand and the citron in the left, they recite the following prayer: "Blessed art Thou, O Lord our God, King of the universe, who hast sanctified us with Thy commandments, and hast enjoined us to take the palm branch." Then each turns his citron upside down and waves his palm branch three times toward each point of the compass, and the legate of the congregation pronounces the benediction; the Hallel is chanted; the lessons are read from the law <Lev. 22:26; 23:44; Num. 29:12-16> and from the prophets <Zech. 14:1-21>. After this the Musaph prayer is recited; when the reader comes to the passage where the word priests occurs, the Aaronites and the Levites rise, and, after the latter have washed the hands of the former, the priests, with uplifted hands, pronounce the priestly benediction <Num. 6:24-27> upon the congregation, whose faces are veiled with the Talith. The elders then march around the ark, in the center of the synagogue, the legate carrying the scroll and the rest of the palm branches, repeating the Hosanna and waving the palms in memory of the procession around the altar. The morning service concluded, the people again go to their booths to partake of the festive meal with the poor and the stranger. About five or six o'clock they recite, in the synagogue, the Minchah prayer, answering to the daily evening sacrifice in the Temple.

The ritual and rites of the second evening and morning are similar to those of the first; the lesson from the prophets, however, is from <1 Kin. 8:2-21>. After the afternoon service of this day the middle days of the

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

festival begin, which last four days, when the ritual is like that of ordinary days, a few prayers being inserted in the regular formula; lessons are read on each day, and the procession goes around the ark.

The seventh day, i.e., the Great Hosanna, is celebrated with peculiar solemnity, inasmuch as it is believed that on this day God decrees the rain for the future harvest. On the evening previous every Israelite supplies himself with a small bunch of willows tied with palm bark. Some pious Jews read all night from Deuteronomy, the Psalms, the Mishna, etc., and are immersed before the morning prayer. Candles are lighted at the time of morning service, and after the morning prayer (similar to those of the preceding days) seven scrolls are taken from the ark, from one of which the lesson is read. After prayer the procession, headed by the rabbi and the legate, with those carrying the scrolls, goes seven times around the ark or the reading desk, reciting the Hosannas and waving their palms. The palms are then laid down and the willows beaten.

On the evening of the seventh day the festival commences, which concludes the whole cycle of the feast. Being a day of holy convocation, the Kiddush (i.e., proclamation) of its sanctity is offered. On the following morning, in the synagogue, the prayers of the first two days are offered; the special lesson of the day is read; the Musaph, or additional prayer, is offered, and the priests pronounce the benediction. The people no longer take their meals in the booths on this day. On the evening of this day begins the festival called the Rejoicing of the Law. The eighteen benedictions are recited. All the scrolls are taken from the ark, into which a lighted candle is placed. A procession of distinguished members is headed by the legate; they hold the scrolls in their hands and go around the reading desk; the scrolls are then put back into the ark, except the one placed upon the desk, from which is read the last chapter of Deuteronomy. All persons in the synagogue are called to the reading, including children. The evening service over, the children leave the synagogue in procession, carrying banners with sundry Heb. inscriptions.

On the following morning the Jews resort again to the synagogue, recite the Hallel after the eighteen benedictions, empty the ark of all its scrolls, put a lighted candle into it, and with the scrolls go around the reading desk amid jubilant songs. The scrolls are returned to the ark, with the exception of two, from one of which is read <Deut. 33>. Four persons are at first called, then all the little children, and then again several adults. The first of these is known as the Bridegroom of the Law, and after the cantor has addressed him in a lengthy Heb. formula the last verses of the Pentateuch are read. Following the reading, all the people exclaim, "Be strong!" <Genesis 1:1-2:3> is read, to which another is called who is known as the Bridegroom of Genesis, to whom is delivered a Heb. formula; the Maphtir (i.e., <Num. 29:35-30:1>) is read from another scroll; the Mustaph, or additional special prayer for the festival, is said; and the service is concluded. The rest of the day is spent in rejoicing and feasting.

The design of this festival is to celebrate the annual completion of the perusal of the Pentateuch, inasmuch as on this day the last section of the law is read.

Selected Scripture References for the Feast of Tabernacles:

- § Held after harvest and vintage – [Deuteronomy 16:13](#)
- § Began fifteenth of seventh month – [Leviticus 23:34, 39](#)
- § Lasted seven days - [Leviticus 23:34, 41](#); [Deuteronomy 16:13, 15](#)
- § Called the feast of ingathering – [Exodus 23:16, 17](#)
- § All males obliged to appear at - [Exodus 23:16, 17](#)
- § First and last days of, holy convocations - [Leviticus 23:35, 39](#); [Numbers 29:12, 35](#) Sacrifices during - [Leviticus 23:36, 37](#); [Numbers 29:13-39](#)

TO BE OBSERVED

- § With rejoicing - [Deuteronomy 16:14-15](#)
- § Perpetually - [Leviticus 23:34](#)
- § The people dwell in booths during - - [Leviticus 23:42](#); [Nehemiah 8:15-16](#)
- § The law publicly read every seventh year at - [Deuteronomy 31:10-12](#) [Nehemiah 8:18](#)

CUSTOMS OBSERVED AT

- § Bearing branches of palms - [Leviticus 23:40](#); [Revelation 7:9](#)
- § Drawing water from the pool of Siloam – [Isaiah 12:3](#); [John 7:2, 37-39](#)
- § Singing hosannas – [Psalm 118:24-29](#); [Matthew 21:8-9](#)
- § To commemorate the sojourn of Israel in the desert - [Leviticus 23:43](#)

REMARKABLE CELEBRATIONS OF

- § At the dedication of Solomon's temple – [I Kings 8:2, 65](#)
- § After the captivity – [Exodus 3:4](#); [Nehemiah 8:17](#)

- source: Torrey's Topical Index

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

My Doer's Journal

Complete Column C as soon after the class as possible. Pray that God will give you specific opportunities to DO each item we covered this week. Then open your journal each day and record how God has provided you with opportunities to DO in Column D. Journal the details of what happened, how it happened, what God is teaching you, how He is growing you, etc. Refer to page 24.

A	B	C	D
What I am to DO	Scripture Reference	What this might look like	How God helped me DO it this week
1. Gird up the loins of my mind	I Peter 1:13		
2. Be sober	I Peter 1:13		
3. Exhibit hope despite circumstances	I Peter 1:13		
4. Turn away from your former worldly conduct	I Peter 1:14		
5. Be holy in my conduct	I Peter 1:15		

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

My Doer's Journal

Complete Column C as soon after the class as possible. Pray that God will give you specific opportunities to DO each item we covered this week. Then open your journal each day and record how God has provided you with opportunities to DO in Column D. Journal the details of what happened, how it happened, what God is teaching you, how He is growing you, etc. Refer to page 24.

A	B	C	D
What I am to DO	Scripture Reference	What this might look like	How God helped me DO it this week
6. Conduct my time here on earth living in reverence of God	I Peter 1:17		
7. KNOW that I was redeemed by Christ's blood and not by corruptible things	I Peter 1:18-19		
8. Love one another fervently with a pure heart	I Peter 1:22		
9. Lay aside all malice, all deceit, and hypocrisies, envies and all evil speakings	I Peter 2:1		
10. Come to Him as a living stone	I Peter 2:4		

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

My Doer's Journal

Complete Column C as soon after the class as possible. Pray that God will give you specific opportunities to DO each item we covered this week. Then open your journal each day and record how God has provided you with opportunities to DO in Column D. Journal the details of what happened, how it happened, what God is teaching you, how He is growing you, etc. Refer to page 24.

A	B	C	D
What I am to DO	Scripture Reference	What this might look like	How God helped me DO it this week
11. Offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ	I Peter 2:5		
12. Proclaim the praises of Him who called you out of darkness into His marvelous light	I Peter 2:9		
13. Abstain from fleshly lusts which war against the soul	I Peter 2:11		
14. Conduct yourself honorably among the Gentiles in a way that your good works are evident	I Peter 2:12		
15. Submit to every ordinance of man for the sake of Jesus Christ	I Peter 2:13		

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

My Doer's Journal

Complete Column C as soon after the class as possible. Pray that God will give you specific opportunities to DO each item we covered this week. Then open your journal each day and record how God has provided you with opportunities to DO in Column D. Journal the details of what happened, how it happened, what God is teaching you, how He is growing you, etc. Refer to page 24.

A	B	C	D
What I am to DO	Scripture Reference	What this might look like	How God helped me DO it this week
16. Not using Christian liberty as a cloak for vice	I Peter 2:16		
17. Show our boss proper respect, even if she or he is harsh	I Peter 2:18		
18. When you do good and suffer, if you take it patiently, this is commendable before God	I Peter 2:20		
19. Wives, like the example of Christ being obedient to His Father, be submissive to your own husbands	I Peter 3:1		
20. Do not let your adornment be merely outward, but inward with a gentle and quiet spirit	I Peter 3:3		

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

My Doer's Journal

Complete Column C as soon after the class as possible. Pray that God will give you specific opportunities to DO each item we covered this week. Then open your journal each day and record how God has provided you with opportunities to DO in Column D. Journal the details of what happened, how it happened, what God is teaching you, how He is growing you, etc. Refer to page 24.

A	B	C	D
What I am to DO	Scripture Reference	What this might look like	How God helped me DO it this week
21. Husbands, likewise, dwell with them with understanding, giving honor to the wife	I Peter 3:7		
22. Be likeminded, living in harmony	I Peter 3:8		
23. Be sympathetic, having compassion	I Peter 3:8		
24. Love one another as brothers (and sisters)	I Peter 3:8		
25. Be humble	I Peter 3:8		

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

My Doer's Journal

Complete Column C as soon after the class as possible. Pray that God will give you specific opportunities to DO each item we covered this week. Then open your journal each day and record how God has provided you with opportunities to DO in Column D. Journal the details of what happened, how it happened, what God is teaching you, how He is growing you, etc. Refer to page 24.

A	B	C	D
What I am to DO	Scripture Reference	What this might look like	How God helped me DO it this week
26. Not returning evil for evil or reviling for reviling, but on the contrary blessing, knowing that you were called to this	I Peter 3:9		
27. Refrain my tongue from evil, and my lips from speaking deceit.	I Peter 3:10		
28. Turn away from evil and do good; seek peace and pursue it.	I Peter 3:11		
29. Sanctify the Lord God in your hearts	I Peter 3:15		
30. Always be ready to give a defense to everyone who asks you a reason for the hope that is in you, with meekness and fear	I Peter 3:16		

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

My Doer's Journal

Complete Column C as soon after the class as possible. Pray that God will give you specific opportunities to DO each item we covered this week. Then open your journal each day and record how God has provided you with opportunities to DO in Column D. Journal the details of what happened, how it happened, what God is teaching you, how He is growing you, etc. Refer to page 24.

A	B	C	D
What I am to DO	Scripture Reference	What this might look like	How God helped me DO it this week
31. Arm yourselves also with the same mind as Jesus Christ	I Peter 4:1		
32. No longer should the rest of his time in the flesh for the lusts of men, but for the will of God	I Peter 4:2		
33. Live according to God in the spirit	I Peter 4:6		
34. Be serious and watchful in your prayers	I Peter 4:7		
35. Above all things have fervent love for one another	I Peter 4:8		

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

My Doer's Journal

Complete Column C as soon after the class as possible. Pray that God will give you specific opportunities to DO each item we covered this week. Then open your journal each day and record how God has provided you with opportunities to DO in Column D. Journal the details of what happened, how it happened, what God is teaching you, how He is growing you, etc. Refer to page 24.

A	B	C	D
What I am to DO	Scripture Reference	What this might look like	How God helped me DO it this week
36. Be hospitable to one another without grumbling	I Peter 4:9		
37. As each one has received a gift, minister it to one another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God	I Peter 4:10		
38. If anyone speaks, let him speak as the oracles of God	I Peter 4:11a		
39. If anyone ministers, let him do it as with the ability which God supplies	I Peter 4:11b		
40. Don't think it strange or unjust that you suffer trials, but rejoice in them, as one counted worthy by God	I Peter 4:12-14		

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

My Doer's Journal

Complete Column C as soon after the class as possible. Pray that God will give you specific opportunities to DO each item we covered this week. Then open your journal each day and record how God has provided you with opportunities to DO in Column D. Journal the details of what happened, how it happened, what God is teaching you, how He is growing you, etc. Refer to page 24.

A	B	C	D
What I am to DO	Scripture Reference	What this might look like	How God helped me DO it this week
41. Do not be a bad witness (ashamed as a murder, thief, evildoer or busybody)	I Peter 4:15		
42. Glorify God in suffering for the sake of Christ	I Peter 4:16		
43. As you suffer, doing God's will, commit your soul to God your Creator	I Peter 4:19		
44. Submit to the elders (church leadership)	I Peter 5:5		
45. Submit to one another	I Peter 5:5		

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

My Doer's Journal

Complete Column C as soon after the class as possible. Pray that God will give you specific opportunities to DO each item we covered this week. Then open your journal each day and record how God has provided you with opportunities to DO in Column D. Journal the details of what happened, how it happened, what God is teaching you, how He is growing you, etc. Refer to page 24.

A	B	C	D
What I am to DO	Scripture Reference	What this might look like	How God helped me DO it this week
46. Be clothed with humility	I Peter 5:5		
47. Humble yourselves under the mighty hand of God, that He may exalt you in due time	I Peter 5:6		
48. Cast all your care upon Him, for He cares for you	I Peter 5:7		
49. Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil walks about like a roaring lion, seeking whom he may devour	I Peter 5:8		
50. Resist the devil, steadfast in the faith	I Peter 5:9		

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

My Doer's Journal

Complete Column C as soon after the class as possible. Pray that God will give you specific opportunities to DO each item we covered this week. Then open your journal each day and record how God has provided you with opportunities to DO in Column D. Journal the details of what happened, how it happened, what God is teaching you, how He is growing you, etc. Refer to page 24.

A	B	C	D
What I am to DO	Scripture Reference	What this might look like	How God helped me DO it this week
51. By which have been given to us exceedingly great and precious promises (live like you believe them)	2 Peter 1:4		
52. Giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue, to virtue knowledge,	2 Peter 1:5		
53. to knowledge self-control, to self-control perseverance, to perseverance godliness,	2 Peter 1:6		
54. to godliness brotherly kindness, and to brotherly kindness love.	2 Peter 1:7		
55. Therefore, brethren, be even more diligent to make your call and election sure, for if you do these things you will never stumble	2 Peter 1:10		

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

My Doer's Journal

Complete Column C as soon after the class as possible. Pray that God will give you specific opportunities to DO each item we covered this week. Then open your journal each day and record how God has provided you with opportunities to DO in Column D. Journal the details of what happened, how it happened, what God is teaching you, how He is growing you, etc. Refer to page 24.

A	B	C	D
What I am to DO	Scripture Reference	What this might look like	How God helped me DO it this week
56. Finish my life well	2 Peter 1:12-15		
57. Knowing this first, that no prophecy of Scripture is of any private interpretation, for prophecy never came by the will of man, but holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Spirit.	2 Peter 1:20-21		
58. Be prepared for false teachers by knowing the genuine, asking the Spirit's leading, and do what Paul commended the Bereans for: searching the Scriptures daily to see if these things were true...	2Peter 2:1-22		
59. By way of reminder, that you may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us, the apostles of the Lord and Savior	1 Peter 3:1b-2		

1 Peter 2:2: Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may GROW UP in your salvation. (NIV)

My Doer's Journal

Complete Column C as soon after the class as possible. Pray that God will give you specific opportunities to DO each item we covered this week. Then open your journal each day and record how God has provided you with opportunities to DO in Column D. Journal the details of what happened, how it happened, what God is teaching you, how He is growing you, etc. Refer to page 24.

A	B	C	D
What I am to DO	Scripture Reference	What this might look like	How God helped me DO it this week
60. Knowing this first: that scoffers will come in the last days, walking according to their own lusts	2 Peter 3:3		
61. What manner of persons ought you to be in holy conduct and godliness, looking for and hastening the coming of the day of God	2 Peter 3:11b-12a		
62. Nevertheless we, according to His promise, look for new heavens and a new earth in which righteousness dwells	2 Peter 3:13		
63. Looking forward to these things, be diligent to be found by Him in peace, without spot and blameless	2 Peter 3:14		
64. Consider that the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation	2 Peter 3:15		

